



For more African books please make direct search on Google  
<https://novelsguru.com/>

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

## Prologue

The Man In Me 

A FEW YEARS AGO

Aphelele (Pheh)

It's just like any other matric day with our white English teacher standing in front of us looking as yummy as any other bright day. Luckily she doesn't have her most liked book "My Children My Africa" which makes me wonder what are we gonna do today. She walks around the class swaying her hips as usual.

Miss Law:"Today I've decided against our usual book and decided am gonna tell you a short story. There won't be questions there will be a lesson though."

Ferris:"At least that book is boring". Everyone agrees. Ferris is what I call our spokesperson,the most talkative guy there is on Earth. Am saying this because 30 minutes is long without him uttering a single word. But he's not lying though honestly it's a bit boring.

Miss Law:"Before I begin can someone please describe the word \*pain\* for me cause our short story revolves around it?". She looks at the 43 faces starring at her. She doesn't look like she's expecting an answer but I raise my hand but not too high for everyone to notice but just the pretty and beautiful woman standing in front of my eyes,damn! She looks damn gorgeous with her black jeans,white vest perfectly tucked in with white block heels. Her brown hair just over her shoulders, finishing the look with a black blazer specially made for women. She can really match her outfits but who am I kidding she matches them like any other day.

I was racist towards white women but this one here is drop dead gorgeous but I blame God for not giving them the ass, curves and the boobs, talk about being unfair but she still looks good.

Miss Law:"Yes Miss?"(confused look). It's the fifth time Miss Law forgetting my surname,how could she?

Ferris:"It's Miss WomanBoy, a woman stuck in a man's body"(chuckles). The whole class starts laughing. Well now I

just lost my confidence but I continue anyway they are not worth it. I've learned not to mind them. I focus on this white woman once again.

Me:"Ngcobo Miss Ngcobo my lady" I say in the most charming way. Everyone in the class went "mmmh" but I continue anyway.

Me:"Pain is a general term that describes uncomfortable sensations in the body. It stems from activation of the nervous system. Pain can range from annoying to debilitating, and it can feel like a sharp stabbing or a full ache. Pain can also be described as throbbing, stinging, sore, and pinching". I smile proudly, that's why I love Google.

Miss Law gives me a slight nod and a smile is plastered on her face showing me her Colgate smile with the pink lipstick on her lips and that's the confirmation I need to know I nailed it. I take my seat as I hear a round of applause now that feels great.

Miss Law:"Impressive really impressive now let's start our short story shall we?.... There was once a carpenter who would work most of his days at his workshop then knock off on sunset. One day when he knocked off he locked his workshop as usual then went home. At night a black mamba slithered through the hole in the wall and..."

My mind was far away from the story now. This is the best accomplishment to last me the whole year. In all 17 years in my life I never felt this proud. Am not different after all since I managed to impress a woman.. a white one at that... Being a book worm works wonders for me but I can't help it. This lady loves to read...

To be continued...

01

A FEW YEARS LATER

Aphelele Ngcobo

I was cooking up a storm in our two plate stove in the kitchen. Nothing much just yellow rice and chicken... A few pieces Tebogo came with last night. After finishing my matric I decided to take a gap year which turned out to be two years since I wasn't interested in school the following year. But this year am going back to school, collage to be precise. MaFuze has been on my throat ever since

telling me that my brother Tebogo brings income whilst with only a matric certificate while am staying at home. I was a Commerce student or still is and I wanna do Public Management since it just takes two years. My mother walks in as I close the pot.

Mom:"So when are you gonna get back to school young lady?"

Me:"Relax I'll be out of your face in two months time Fazi" It's April So I'll go to school on the second semester.

Mom:"Good where is Tebogo?"

Me:"I don't know that good of a nothing son of yours"

Mom:"Don't start Thembeke am not in the mood". I just zip it cause I know when she calls me by my second name am screwed. She proceeds to her bedroom while I continue cooking.

## MATHAPELO MOKOENA

I glance at the pregnancy test one more time with tears streaming down my cheeks. I can't be pregnant. Not again. This is the fourth time. I wipe my tears with the back of my hand and stand up from the toilet seat and to the basin to wash my hands. I will have to abort with the kind of work that I do having a baby is the last thing on my mind.

Pearl:"Tee are you done? Your client is waiting for you outside. You've been in there for too long" I quickly compose myself and fix my make up. Once I get out of the bathroom I find Pearl on my bed preparing for the night. I also get out of my nightdress and settle for a sexy red and black lingerie. Well the thing is am a prostitute. Pearl says we are sex workers but I know she's tryna make our job look good. Bakkie (our boss) arranges clients for us then they tell us where we should go since they can't come to us. After rendering our services we then get back

to the house where we live in with the other girls. I wasn't kidnapped or abducted or even forced to be a prostitute but I did it out of free will. But that's the story for another day. A knock on the door comes through. Pearl takes the rest of her things and rushes to the door, waves me goodbye and walks out. It's showtime

Me:"Hey lover boy ready for a good time?"

Him:"I was born ready I heard you were a freak, I paid good cash for this night"

Me:"Yeah nigga am freak bitch"

He comes closer taking off his clothes on by one and finally arrives to me. I quickly take off his underwear and give him a BJ.....



## APHELELE (PHEH)

After dishing up I called Mah to come eat. U covered food for Tebogo with another plate I then took my food and settled on a two-seater couch. A while later MaFuze aslo came and sat across me. I noticed that she had added nother piece of chicken,I sighed.

Me:"Mama what are we gonna eat tomorrow morning if you are adding another piece to your food?"

Mah:"Hhayi Thembeka usukhulumela ukudla manje?(you are speaking for food now?)" She asked rather suprised.

Me:"But mama two pieces are enough fo you why add another one whilst I only got to eat only one piece of chicken". She looked at me schocked. She placed her plate on the small coffee table in the middle of the room.

Mah:"Take your food then. I knew it was a bad idea letting you cook in my house,you are 20 years for crying out loud. Other children are either at University or collage but you are in my house complaining about three pieces of chicken for food you didn't even buy". She huffs. She compared me again. Now I really need to get out of this house as soon as possible. I hear the kitchen door being opened and closed. After a while

Tebogo walks in with his plate and sits next to my mother, and starts to eat.

Him: "Dumela MaQadi". My mother just nods, right then I know that she is pissed.

Him: "Hao Ma-Offer what's wrong?"

Mah: "The lady of this house doesn't want me to eat, she was complaining why am eating three pieces of chicken." She says in the most sad voice I've ever heard any this woman. Tebogo snorts and shouts

Him: "Pheh!!"

Me: "Bhuti(brother)"

Him: "You buy food in this house now huh!?"

Me: "No I don't"

Him: "Then why shout at my mother if she eats three pieces of chicken?!"

Me: "Bhuti what are we gonna eat in the morning?"

Him: "I bought a braai pack of eight pieces didn't I?"

Me: "You did"

Him: "So?"

(Silence)

Him:"Nx yet you are complaining while you don't even buy food". He takes his plate then exits the house. I see Mama smiling mxm this woman. I take my plate to go eat in my room.

Tebogo is my mother's first born, her favorite. My father died at a young age,well that is what my mother says. Tebogo has his own father but he left. I don't know the reason yet but Tebogo's father is Sotho, hence the name \*Tebogo\*. He also uses a different surname, Mohlakoana while I use Ngcobo my mother's surname.

Am lesbian yeah am into girls. My interest in girls was intrigued after high school. I had a crush for Miss Law, told her that she didn't approve me said maybe it's adolescent but it wasn't. She also said am too young says a 32-year old woman. But am over her now,heard she's married. I have a girlfriend,Pearl, she's 22,my Vanilla Queen. I love her body: big booty,big boobs,and her fresh thighs damn! She finished her matric long ago. She says she's at University don't know which one but I doubt that, I just need to find out exactly what she does cause my girl is too loaded for a student.

MATHAPELO MOKOENA

At around 10pm he left. I went to take a shower then wore my PJs. This guy booked the whole night so I still had time to rest till the morning. My phone vibrated on the pedestal. It was a text message from Pearl.

\*Yummy pants just left am coming over to your room\*. I sighed just when I was about to rest, she really doesn't know when to stop. The door opened and she walked in bubbly as always.

Her:"So how did it went?" She asked all smiles.

Me:"You know the usual"

Her:"Was it long,short,thick or thin?" Tjhoo this chick.

Me:"Long and thick but his game needs work he was like an old grandpa mxm I dressed up for nothing." I rolled my eyes. Pearl took the chance and laughed at me mxm.

Her:"He was handsome for nothing". She clapped her hands dramatically. "What a waste of sperm". She continues talking and I zoon out.

Today it's one of those days where I miss my parents. They died in a fire when I was 14. I just came back from school and saw our house on fire. People were trying to put out the fire but it was too late. They were ashes. Relatives came and we buried the last remains of my parents. Since our house burnt down I went to live with my aunt,Gloria. I needed to get a new certificate. When I did I told aunt Gloria I wanted to change my name to Mathapelo Mokoena. Don't get me wrong I loved my own name but it only bought tears cause my parents are gone to call me by my own name. I almost lost my sanity when I

found out my parents are dead and they are never coming back. I sunk into depression for a year.

Aunt Gloria took me to a therapist. I then started to be okay. Even now when someone talks about parents a tear escapes my eyes. At the age of 15 I lost aunt Gloria to blood cancer. Close relatives didn't want to take me in. I lived in her house close to 3 months then her son came back from hell to claim his mother's house back. I was homeless for two months until Bakkie got me out of the streets. I was a beggar that time. Life was really hard...

To be continued

## MATHAPELO(PELO)

After two years staying with Bakkie I got myself involved in drugs,I have used any type of drug you can think of. Then in order to pay Bakkie for staying at his house all these years he introduced me to prostitution. He broke my virginity and after that I was for his "clients".

Bakkie is rich. Not filthy but he's rich. After he broke my virginity I was moved to the building where all sex workers lived. That's when I met Pearl and we've been friends ever since. I was 17 she was 18.

Pearl:"Earth to Thapelo".

Me:"Sorry girlfriend I've zoomed out,again".

Her:"You left me all alone".

Me:"Sorry let's just sleep cause tomorrow we are going back to hell".

Her:"Am the one who's going to hell remember you are at the top".

Me:"it Means nothing since we all have sex at the end of the night".

Her:"Sleep then doll face am going to my room".

Me:"Why not sleep here?".

Her:"Eeow where you've just had sex no thanks".

Me:"I don't see a problem".

Her:"Nope bye babes".

She got out of the bed and went out. I just laughed and got back to sleep.

PEARL EDWARD

{MATHAPELO 'S FRIEND}

THE FOLLOWING DAY

Today I was out doing shopping,since Mathapelo is not feeling well. I was allowed to go alone. Bakkie owns a building where we "sex workers" live. We call it "the house" but it's not really house. You see our work is different. We have levels namely: Starter,Main Course and Dessert. Am at the main course level which isn't good.

When you first arrive you are at the Starter level cause your vjay is still tight and you're still fresh. You get benefits like having a large bedroom with an insuit bedroom,you have an iPhone,you have more freedom than others,you are required to

go to the hotel if you have a client, you don't get average clients, you can do shopping anytime and security is tight.

Main course level you're no longer "that" tight. Shopping is limited, you have a Hisense phone, you share your room with someone. You share the bathroom with your roommate.

Wherever the client wants it you give it to him anywhere. We don't have security but bracelets that have trackers so you won't run away.

Last but not least the dessert level. Those are the ones that have a "loose" cookie and worn out bodies. They live up to five girls each room I don't wanna begin to think about the bathroom thing. They go sell in the streets

they are the worst. They also have trackers but theirs are in their anklets. They are the most cheap level.

After shopping I went to wait at the restaurant. I was waiting for Aphelele and she's running late. Bakkie will notice I've been gone for too long. Where is she...

APHELELE (PHEH)

I rolled to the other side of the bed, got my phone to check the time, shit! It was 10am already. Am late for my date with Pearl. Am screwed. I quickly take a bath and wear grey sweatpants with my white vest and my sports bra underneath and sneakers. The weather is great so I won't need a jacket. I comb



my hair cut and sprayed my perfume, I look myself one more time then get out, good thing MaFuze is still sleeping. I request an Uber and arrive at the restaurant, I didn't dress up cause it's nothing fancy, I walk up to her and judging by her facial expression I can tell she is pissed. She gets up and gives me a hug and a kiss.

Today she is wearing a bodycon black dress with pencil heels with accessories, nude lipstick and a black weave. She looks good with the dress hugging her perfectly. My chick is beautiful no lies. After we have seated she just stares at me. I know she wants an explanation.

Me: "I know, I woke up late am sorry".

She just nods. Sigh.

Me: "You look beautiful"

Her: "Thanks babe". She smiles. Bam! I win

Me: "So how's school Vanilla?"

Her: "What school babe?". See what am talking about.

Her: "Oh? that school is great ain't complaining". She fakes a smile.

Me: "Cool, so have you ordered yet?". I'll not let this go.

Her:"Just water,let's order food". She calls the waiter,we place our orders.

Her:"Cherry?"

Me:"Vanilla Queen"

Her:"I love you babe"

Me:"I love you more"

Me:"I see you've got shopping bags how was shopping?" She starts talking about the long ques and how undecided she was. I hope Vanilla isn't doing bad shit cause I love her.. I wanna have my future with her. If she has secrets I don't think it's gonna work out. But I need to find out exactly what she does....

To be continued....

04

## APHELELE (PHEH)

By the time I come back from our date u was convinced that Vanilla is hiding something from me. That made me sad I won't lie. She doesn't trust me enough to tell me. Wow. Am the worst Butch ever to my femme. My family doesn't know am lesbian a Butch one at that. It was much easier talking to Mom when I was young. We would talk about everything but now things are different. Am scared coming clean to her cause I know she won't accept me, she will just judge me.

I enter the gate slowly after the taxi has dropped me off at my street. Upon opening the door I find her by the stove cooking lunch I guess

Me: "Sawubona Mah (Hello Mah). Silence.

Mah: "So in this house we just get up and decide to go wherever you were and come back at 13:00 what's your problem Pheh?"

Me: "Nothing Mama"

Mah: "And you are dressed like a man, since when do you dress like that Aphelele or usuyistabane?" (you're gay)

Me: "No"

Mah:"Good then because if you are you will leave my house  
mtana Ndini"

Me:"Yebo Mama"(Yes Mom)

Mah:"Now go dress like a woman and come help me out"

I quickly go to my room well that went well. Am screwed  
shame.If I tell my mother am lesbian then I'll be homeless at  
least am going to collage soon minus one problem.

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Today I wasn't feeling well. I think it's the fact that am pregnant  
again. I decided to text Bakkie.

'Am not feeling well'

'Okay I'll bring over a guard to bring you to my house'

I sighed and changed to something simple,a leggin and a t-shirt.  
I decided to go down stairs so the guard won't have to struggle  
going to the third floor since I was at the Starter level. As I was  
going down the stairs. I bumped Pearl,she looked beautiful but  
not like me,she's just below my level. I look at her as she was all  
smiles.

Me:"And Wena?Where are you coming from?"

She waved her shopping bags on my face.

Her:"Shopping obviously"

Me:"Ohw so why didn't you go with me?"

Her:"You weren't feeling okay mos" With an annoyed look.

Me:"Cool I will come and see you when I come back"

Her:"Okay"

She continued walking to her block still busy on her cheap phone. I glanced at my watch I was slowly losing patience. I continued since I was at the bottom where the kitchen and main door was. The guard wasn't coming thru. When I was about to call Bakkie the guard showed up.

Me:"You're late"

Guard:"I Know"

Me:"And Why aren't you apologizing?"

Guard:"I won't apologize to a sex worker who decided to leave school and home to..." I couldn't let him finish his sentence.

Me:"Fine!Let's go"

Guard:"Good"

The guards are really rude. We walked to the car outside....

To be continued...

05

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA (PHEH'S BROTHER)

I took out a R200 note and placed it on the straw mat.

Me:"Thokoza"

Her:"Your sister is seeing someone,a girl. I see their future they will have a stable life,they have a really bright future"

Me:"That's not good,can't you do something to the girl?"

Her:"Yes I can but we can't bewitch her all the time she will start picking up but there is something you can do,this girl is a sex worker at "The House" she goes by the name Pearl. You need to,you know and make sure when she leaves,your sister sees her,after that their relationship won't be a problem for you"

Me:"Thokoza Gogo"

Her:"You can leave"

I take my shoes and exit the rondavel. Once am out I wear my shoes and look for my phone to look for a certain number of an old friend of mine. I know it's wrong bewitching my own sister but her dad is my worst enemy. When my mom broke up with

my dad she met Pheh's father. He didn't treat me right. He molested me everytime mom went to work. I didn't recover. He stopped for a while then mom got pregnant. After Aphelele was born

## Advertisement

he continued,until I had enough and stabbed him with a kitchen knife,I was 14 that time. Anger drove me insane. When Mom got back from work she was terrified and wanted to call the police,but I told her what was . When she learned that i was molested from the age of ten she was angry as well, she took the knife from me and stabbed him on his crotch until he was dead. She helped me cover the murder up and we buried him behind my two roomed flat at home.

From then we vowed that we will take this secret to the grave. Mom assured me that I wasn't the one who killed Zulu (Pheh's father) because I just stabbed him in the stomach but she finished him off. By the time we finished burying him we got rid off all the evidence. Good thing Aphele was at the Zulu's when we killed her father.

After three days mom called the police claiming that Zulu was "missing",it has been three days without coming home. A missing person's file was opened but he wasn't found obviously. The Zulu's were also contacted and brought Pheh back home. After a week of searching they didn't find anything

regarding Zulu. Pheh was six months when we killed her father, she was turning one that year. 20 years later I still haven't forgotten what happened to me and I won't, I know we killed him but I fear he had an easy way out. So two years ago I decided to make her daughter suffer. Am bewitching her. Her father blesses her from the grave but am blocking that with black magic. We were close but now we are not it's like she sees right thru me so I stopped befriending her and that didn't work out for me since she told me everything about her but now it's hard since I have to consult first. Bewitching her is also hard since she prays a lot.

I got into the car that I borrowed from a friend since this place is far from where I live. It's an hour drive and it's a village of some sort. The phone started ringing and the person answered.

Him: "Hello"

Me: "Hi Bakkie it's me"

Him: "Who's this?"

Me: "It's me Tebogo"

I chuckled....

To be continued...



06

MATHAPELO (PELO)

We were in his office as I impatiently waited for him to finish up talking to the phone.

Bakkie:"Oh yes T my man what can I do for you?"

"That can be arranged my man"

"It's 3k but for you it will be 2k"

"Ahhha good choice I'll have her arranged for you"

"8pm is good,thanks my man,sharp."

He placed the phone on the table then sat down on his chair. I was sitting across him with the table in-between us.

Him:"You were saying?"

Me:"I...um.. pregnant". He gave me a death stare.

Him:"You're what?"

Me:"Pregnant"

Him:"Again?". He started clenching his jaws,this is not gonna end well.

Me:(sighs)"I don't know what happened"

Him:"Kanti where is the loop?". His tone was calm yet powerful.

Me:"I removed it"

Him:"You did what?". He banged the table. I was now shaking in my chair. This man is the devil himself.

Me:"It was uncomfortable"

Him:"So?". He stood up and came to me, I could feel his hot breath on my neck that was how close he was. He was right behind me. I kept quite. He turned my chair around and made me face him. I swallowed. The drugs have made him ugly now. He had bags under his eyes indicating how he doesn't get enough sleep now. When we first met he was handsome, really handsome,he had a body that authors describe in novels:tall,dark,handsome

had a six pack.. yeah those type of things but now all of that was gone he was left in a potbelly it's not that big since it's still developing.

He was dressed in a suit today,a navy one. He has taken off his Blazer and his tie. Besides his jerky side and his new body he still looked good. My vjay used to vibrate to his hot breath on my neck but now it only sends shivers.

Him:"Undressing me already?"

Me:"Umhh...no" I started stuttering.

Him:"Cat got your tongue"

He moved his hand to my coochie and started rubbing my clit. I was really turned on. He moved his fingers up and down then ripped off my leggings, shifted my thong aside then inserted two fingers,I moaned. He added another one and started finger fucking me and just as I was about to reach my peak he took them out. I was really annoyed. He went to his seat and rolled a tissue then wiped his hands. His old self would usually lick them so I was shocked.

Him:"No wonder my client payed half the price,you're no longer tight"

Me:"What?". I froze.

Him:"Don't worry I will replace you soon"

Me:"Am tight"

Him:"You're not,now get out of my office and please tell Pearl to prepare for tonight she's got a special client"

I didn't reply. I got out,I didn't care about the ripped leggings anymore. I went downstairs where I found my guard and we left. Tears streamed down on my way to "the house". It's a 30 min drive. I can't be replaced, I just can't. Why didn't I notice that my vjay can take three fingers now. I will be moved to the

main course level. I won't be able to stand the benefits that comes with that level.

APHELELE(PHEH)

I was on call with Pearl,I have locked myself in my room.

Me:"Vanilla Queen"

Her:"Cherry"

Me:"I miss you babe"

Her:"I miss you too"

Me:"When am I seeing you?"

Her:"I don't know babe"

Me:"Okay am going out to help MaFuze with setting up the table"

Her:She laughed "but babe you're a guy mos".

Me:"To you only other than that am a girl to the world"

Her:"Yeah sorry my love we'll talk later"

Vanilla knows that my family doesn't know am a Butch yet.

Me:"Okay I love you"

Her:"I love you more"

I decided to let go of her "studying". I don't wanna push her away. She will tell me when she is ready. I don't want to get hurt by what she does so I'll let her be until she's ready. I unlocked the door and went to the kitchen to help my mother.

MaFuze:"Who is he?" I was really shocked.

Me:"Who?"

Her:"Your boyfriend,the one you were talking to in your room"

I froze. Was my mom eavesdropping I hope she didn't hear my conversation with Vanilla since she was on loud speaker.

Me:"Mama I don't have a boyfriend"

Her:"Good it's way too soon for me to be a grandma" she smiled..

Me:"You won't". That's the first. Usually we don't speak about me. I'm relieved she didn't hear other things that will make me homeless....

To be continued...

07

PEARL EDWARD

After the call with Cherry (Pheh) I threw myself on my bed.

Zimkita:"And?"

I blushed. Zimkita is my roommate and cousin but only I know that.

Me:"That was Cherry"

Zim:"Duh! Isn't it obvious? You're blushing"

When I started out as a "sex worker" I just wanted to make my life better and go back to school since I dropped out in grade eleven. It was just me, Zimkita and also JR my brother. When I saw that the money was enough i wanted out but Bakkie wasn't having it he wanted me to continue working for him. He threatened to kidnap Zim from home to come work here, but I wasn't having it, I left. After a week Zimkita went missing that's when I realized that Bakkie isn't playing. I came back and demanded Zim to be sent home but again he didn't agree. We tried escaping but he found us, that's how we landed on the main course level cause we were really rude and mean.

Every girl in the building has a five year contract that she has to complete then you're free. Mine is ending this year so I gotta hold on one last year for JR. We don't really know our parents cause we were from an orphanage, and later got adopted by the Edwards who later passed on. JR is my blood brother. I only met Zim at the orphanage and we got separated when we got adopted. She was taken in by us, later when our parents died.

The word "cousin" is just for potrays. We are not really family. I was scared for JR so we sent him off to boarding school in KZN since we are in Gauteng and told him we're working so he doesn't get suspicious. He is 17 doing grade eleven and am proud. We always send him money for school and food since we get 3k for allowance every month. Only Bakkie and I know that Zim is my cousin and it is better that way, I don't want any drama right now.

Me: "I really love her

Advertisement

she makes me happy"

Zim: "Am really happy for you babe, I can't believe you're in love with the kind of work you do its quite rare you know".

I haven't told Zimkita that Cherry doesn't know that am a sex worker cause am afraid to be judged. It's my first time dating a girl so I want to be sure if it's permanent. We've been together

for 6 months now I'll tell her when we have our one year anniversary.

Me:"It's great being in love"

Voice:"Who's in love?". I froze but sighed in relief when I realize that it's Mathapelo. I haven't told her about Cherry since we are not close anymore.

Zim:"She is". She said pointing me. Fuck am screwed. She looked at me confused. I just looked everywhere but her.

Pelo:"So you're in a relationship and you didn't tell me?". I sighed.

Me:"You were distant these days that's why"

Pelo:"You're going against the law"

Yeah we are not allowed to date otherwise there will be consequences.

Me:"I know am just in love and besides my contract is ending this year".

Pelo:"Well if you're happy then am happy for you",she smiled,"can I see his picture?".

Me:"It's a her,am dating a lesbian". I unlocked my phone and showed her Pheh's pictures. She was in awe.

Pelo:"Ohw I didn't know". She sounded hurt. I felt really bad.



Me:"I didn't know I was bisexual also it's a new thing."

Pelo:"How long?"

Me:"Six months". She just nodded. I have hurt my best friend I feel very sad.

Pelo:"Anyway you're working you will be fetched at 8pm". She gave me my phone back and left. Sigh it's gonna be a long ass night.

MATHAPELO (PELO)

When I reached my level I got into my room I threw myself on my bed and got busy with my phone. I was hurt because my best friend doesn't trust me anymore. Ever since she was moved to the main course level we don't talk anymore,I guess that's why.

I was blown away by her girlfriend. She is handsomely beautiful. I didn't know a Butch could look this good. She is dark skinned and has really small boobs which works on her advantage. She had a nicely trimmed hair cut that suits her and judging by her clothes you couldn't tell whether it's a man or a woman. I saw a photo where she was wearing briefs and sweatpants with a sport bra on. She was also wearing a jacket but didn't zip it. The Butch got six packs,damn! She's definitely a snack. I found myself drooling over her pics.

Am a bit jealous cause I once had a crush on Pearl but was too scared to tell her. Am also bisexual but only I know that, Pearl doesn't know. I went to Facebook so I can stalk Pearl's boyfriend/girlfriend whatever. Since I didn't get her name I just went to Pearl's timeline and she had said to be in a relationship with "Phelele Cherry Fuze". I clicked her name and it led me straight to her timeline. A call from Bakkie disturbed me, I answered.

Me:"Hi"

Him:"A doctor will come tomorrow so you can terminate"

I swallowed. Aborting is really painful.

Me:"Okay"

Him:"Don't worry you're not working tomorrow"

Me:"Ohw"

Him:"Sharp"

He ended the call and I continued stalking Phelele. Her photos were really good. I saved a few. I also sent her a friend request....

To be continued...

08

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I was parked outside "the house". I have already made my payment. It's quite costly considering that I don't even earn that much, but it's worth it. This Pearl girl came out and came to the car. She got in the front seat. She was wearing a tight short sparkling dress that was showing off her cleavage and yellow thighs. I started driving, maybe she was worth it after all. When we were at my street her eyes bulged out her jaw was on the floor. Jackpot! I drove in and parked it in front of the front door. I saw her swallowing.

Me: "Is there anything you would like?"

Her: "Umhh..no"

Me: "Okay then am going to say goodnight to my mother"

Her: "You live with her alone?"

Me: "Nope and also my sister"

Her: "Your surname is?"

Me: "So prostitutes ask questions now?"

Her: "No....ummh sorry you have a different accent so am curious"

Smart girl.

Me:"Ohw Mohlakoana I am a Sotho"

Her:"Alright then"

Me:"You can proceed to my room I'll find you there".I pointed.

Her:"Okay thanks".

We both got out I looked as her ass as she sashayed her way to my flat. My plan is coming along fine. I'll have her leave the house at 8am

Advertisement

Pheh is usually awake at that time and my flat is just opposite her bedroom window so it's gonna be so easy I won't lie am happy.

Pearl Edward

Shit!There's no way am getting out of this one. This is definitely Cherry's house and this is her brother. Am about to have sex with my girlfriend's brother this is sick. I know it's her house cause I have been here before. We've been intimate for three times excluding our quickies. I will have to leave early so that she won't see me. If only I told her the truth. Speak of the devil she calls me.

Me:"Cherry"

Her:"Vanilla Queen"

I blush.

Me:"How are you?"

Her:"Am great I just miss you".

Me:"I miss you too"

Her:"What are you doing?"

Me:"I..umh...studying"

Her:"Ohw okay"

Me:"Babe I need to tell you something"

Her:"Yeah what?"

Me:"Well I Umhh..."

Before I could continue the door opens and Mohlakoana walks in with a bathing basin with a 10litre bucket on the other hand.

Him:"I bought you bathing water"

I quickly speak to the phone .

Me:"I'll call you tomorrow bye". I hang up.

Him:"Who's that?"

Me:"My mother"

Him:"Mmmh nice"

Me:"Thank you for the water"

Him:"Sure thing".

Him bringing me water to bath was really weird. I pray I don't see Cherry tomorrow when I leave.

APHELELE (PHEH)

After my call with Pearl I was really pissed. I swear I heard my brother's voice in the background or I was reading too much into the situation. Why would she hung up when she was about to tell me something, and the fact that there's a guy's voice in the background makes me more furious. I unlock the door and proceed to the dining room where my mom is glued to the television watching The Throne on Mzansi Wethu 163. Other channels don't play cause we don't have much money to pay for all of them. I settle on the couch opposite her.

Me:"MaFuze"

Her:"Phelele"

Me:"Unjani Ma?"(How are you mother?)

Her:"Am good, your brother has a girlfriend"

Me:"Ohw"

Her:"He said we'll meet her some other day"

Me:"That's nice"

Her:"She's a yellow bone"

Me:"That's good"

Her:"Uzosizalela abazukulu abahle"(She'll bare us beautiful grandkids). This topic is boring honestly.

Me:"Mmmh"

Her:"You could bring your boyfriend for dinner sometime"

I choked on my own saliva

Me:"What!?"

Her:"Hao is there a problem?"

Me:"No I wasn't expecting that"

Her:"Ohw"

Me:"Am retiring to bed goodnight mother".

I leave her with the TV starring at her. Mom is getting more weird honestly.

To be continued....

09

THE FOLLOWING DAY

MATHAPELO(PELO)

The nurse did come at 7pm and that was too early. She had already given me the pills and also painkillers. The pain had started to kick in. It was a dreadful honestly. I was on my knees in front of my bed, the nurse was seated on the chair, relaxed. She was a bit older she was in her 50s I didn't think she was even working but am not sure since she is wearing her uniform. I started crying that's how painful it was.

Me:"Gosh am dying"

Nurse:"Nobody said killing was easy"

Me:"Please give me something I can't take this!!"

Nurse:"I've already given you something". I can tell she was really annoyed but I didn't care I was in pain.

Me:"Oh God!". I was now rolling on the ground. It's the fourth time doing this but it's still feels like the first time, damn am not doing this again. The nurse started singing I can tell she was enjoying this.

Nurse:"We baba Wethu Osezulwini Khuluma Nabo Baba  
Khuluma Nabo Abakwazi Abakwenzayo We Baba Izenzo Zabo  
Zisebumnyameni Khuluma Nabo Baba"



Me:"You're enjoying this neh"

Nurse:"Not as much as you enjoy having unprotected sex."

Me:"Just do your job!". I was now irritated.

Nurse:"I am. I just pray that child haunts you".

Me:"I wanna pee". She helped me to the bathroom and stood next to the door and looked at me. "Can I have some privacy?".

Nurse:"It's not like your vjay is private anyway". She bangs the door. That was rude really rude. I sat on the toilet seat.

Me:"Ahhhh!!"

APHELELE(PHEH)

I woke up in a really good mood,I don't know why. I had the sound system in my room on full blast,my favorite song was on repeat. Pop Smoke ft KAROL\_Enjoy Yourself.

'Palaze,what you cookin'?

Look,look

You don't gotta put your cup down,hold on(Ooh)

Drink freely(Yeah) and holla at me if you need me(Ooh)

Baby,you should enjoy yourself (Ooh)

Bossed up,need no help,look(Ooh)

They say

Advertisement

"Fly girls have more fun"(More fun,more fun)

So what?So you should enjoy yourself,yeah,yeah

You should enjoy yourself (Ooh)

I went to the kitchen and went outside to sweep the yard,Mom was really surprised.

Mom:"And then?"

Me:"Am just happy that's all"

I just continued and heard Tebogo's voice

Tebogo:"Well this is a surprise Rigby"

I was surprised he called me by my pet name and stopped sweeping to turn and looked at him... I was met by the shock of my life my...the Queen of my heart standing there my mother and Tebogo. I instantly felt dizzy.

Me:"Tell me this is a bad dream"

Mah:"Aybo why?"

Me:"Vanilla?". That came out as a whisper. I was hurt and angry she just looked everywhere but me. I just started trembling also.

Me:"Why would you do something like this?". My heart broke.

PEARL EDWARD

When I saw Cherry sweeping the yard I knew it was over for me. I tried hiding but Tebogo moved away on purpose,when she turned to look at me. I saw anger,hurt and heartbreak written on her face. Tears streamed down.

Her:"Why would you do something like this?"

Me:"Am sorry babe"

MaFuze:"Babe?! Aybo what's going on makoti?"

Me:"Am not your makoti mama am not Mohlakoana's girlfriend,am Cherry's girlfriend"

Pheh:"Ohw you even call him by his surname now?"

MaFuze:"Who's Cherry?"

I went and knelt in front of Phelele and held her hands.

Me:"Ngcobo,Fuze,Mapholoba Ngyaxolisa Sthandwa Sami (Am sorry my love)it's not what you think babe the truth is I am a prostitute". Don't ask where I knew how to say that. I am Zulu but I have an English name and surname. She was shocked.

MaFuze:"Ihheee! Ngiyalingwa Aphelele Thembeke Ngcobo

uyistabane!"(Am being tested you're gay). "Tebogo you bring prostitutes in my house now heh?!"

This woman was shouting and clapping her hands dramatically. The way she was loud even the neighbors were on their windows.

Pheh:"I've never been hurt like this before,my heart is in pieces, you've not only slept with me but with a lot of different men. I was ready to sacrifice my everything for you but look where that got me am now homeless. I hope you're happy Vanilla I loved you dammit but I guess that wasn't enough for you to trust me,when I get back here I don't wanna see you I've deleted you in my life". I was hurt. With that said she left me kneeling there and went to the house with her mother following her behind shouting. I couldn't help but cry out loud. I made my bed now I have to lay on it...

To be continued.

Tebogo Mokoena

I was really happy about how everything unfolded. It hurt me to see that Pheh was hurting from this whole situation. After she went to the house I got in the car and drove Pearl back to "the house". She was silent all the way...I can understand how she feels. After she got off I drove back home.

When I arrived Pheh had packed all her bags and stacked them on the stoep. This had MaFuze written all over it. I got off and went near the house.

Me:MaFuze kwenzakalani?(What's going on)

Mah:Am kicking her out ayy angikhoni Zweli(I can't)

Me:Uzoyaphi Kodua?(Where will she go?)

Mah:I don't care but as long as it's not my house. All along you are gay in my house Qaluyiva!!. She clapped her hands.

Pheh came out with another bag,there was three bags at the door already. She was really moving out of the house. This was bad. Now how will I bewitch her when she is so far away from me. I need to find a way to bring her back to the house so it will be much easier. I looked at her,she looked just like her father,which brew anger inside of me but I couldn't let it get

the better of me,I calmed down and took a her bags and put them in the boot. She looked at me dumbfounded

Me:Come on let's go Rigby

Pheh:Okay

MaFuze:Where are you taking her?

I just ignored her and drove off leaving her in the middle of the yard.

Aphelele(Pheh)

I just looked out the window and tears streamed down,I was really hurt no lie. I didn't knew that a heartbreak could hurt this much

I don't know where Tebogo was taking me but it's really that far, we've been on the road for a while now. But I didn't mind I don't wanna face my mother right now...

Music was playing on the speakers. It was Logic,Khalid and Alessia Cara the song was 1-800-273-8255

'Pain don't hurt the same

Advertisement

I know'

'The lane I travel feels alone'

'But I'm moving till my legs give out'

'And I see my tears melt in the snow'

'But I don't wanna cry,I don't wanna cry anymore'

'I wanna feel alive,I don't even wanna die anymore'

'Oh I don't wanna'

'I don't wanna'

'I don't even wanna die anymore'

Finally Tebigi drove in into some apartment. He took my bags and unlocked and we got in. I was feeling much better. The apartment wasn't bad it had 2 bedrooms,kitchen,bathroom and the living room. The interior was beautiful no lie.

Tebogo:You'll live here until you find your feet.

Me:Thank you so much

Tebogo:Don't sweat it

Me:Rent?

Tebogo:Don't worry about it.. I'll send 2k for grocery I don't know if it's okay

Me:Yes it's okay you've done much for me already

Tebogo:Don't worry about mom she will come around

Me:I just hope she does

[2 DAYS LATER]

Mathapelo (Pelo)

I was lying on the bed. Abortion is really painful. My abdomen still hurts a bit but it wasn't severe as it was on the past two days later.I even managed to go and take a bath.

I decided to go check up on Pearl. I went to her floor and knocked and was let in by Zimkita but she looked like she was off to somewhere.

Me:Hey,off to somewhere?

Zimkita:Yeah I have a client

Me:mmmh where's Pearl?

Zimkita: She's in go in but she is just like yesterday.

Me:That's weird but I will try to talk to her

Zimkita:Good luck on that am out.

She left. Indeed she was lying in her stomach she was still in bed she has been like this since from yesterday,I went and sat in the bed next to her, tears streamed down her eyes. I was really confused.

Me: Pearl.



Silence. Okay. I was about to call her again but my phone rang. I got off the bed and went to stand next to the window. It was Bakkie

Me:Hello

Bakkie:Yeah you're being moved to the main course level and you know why.

I swallowed

Bakkie:I'll give you a week to heal then you will move

Me:Who is my replacement?

Bakkie:That's none of your business

He hung up.... Wow

To be continued....

11

[A MONTH LATER]

PEARL

I was on call with JR

Me:"How is school?"

JR:"School is fine,when am I seeing you guys?"

Me:"Next week"

JR:"Okay that's cool,greet Zimkita for me"

Me:"Okay I will"

JR:"I love you bye"

Me:"I love you too"

I hung up. It's been a month since our fallout with Cherry and honestly it still hurts. I really loved her but I wasn't transparent with her so I deserve it. We haven't talked since that day. She blocked me on social media, but I created a fake account just to stalk her. She looked really good now, she's even working out. I follow her on Tiktok where she uploads videos of her in the gym.

I've noticed Mathapelo is always commenting on everything that Cherry posts and it kinds of gets to me since she always

uses fire emojis and heart ones. She has always been there I was just too blind to see.

Speaking of which, Pelo is no longer at the Starter level she's at the main course level and I replaced her, am the one using her room, am her "replacement".

Of course she wasn't happy about it. She's been real bitchy about this whole situation. She's making sly comments about me sleeping my way to the top, to be honest the situation is draining, I Don't wanna fight. Zimkita is having her at her worst since they are sharing a room together. I don't wish to be her right now, Mathapelo can be draining. I let out a loud sigh as I leave my room to go and have breakfast. I know drama is involved since we from the Starter level share the kitchen with the main course level.

MATHAPELO(PELO)

I knocked on the door of the bathroom for the fifth time.

Me: "Aibo Nathi siyafuna ukugeza" (We also want to bath)

Zimkita: "Wait your turn".

This was really frustrating.

Me: "You've been in there for a while now".

Zimkita: "Patience is virtue"

I went to sit on my bed. I thought I would have adjusted by now but no it's a different story when it comes to this level. It's hard.

I stand up from the single bed and take my phone from the pedestal. I shouldn't even call Hisense a phone. This thing barely works, it freezes everytime argh. This bed is uncomfortable, I miss my double bed not this thing. I have fallen shame, ngiwile. I unlock it and scroll and find Bakkie's number. I send him a text message:

"Pearl was dating, ask her about a Phelele".

I smile. She shouldn't have declined when Bakkie offered her my position. She has to suffer the consequences. I won't back down without a fight. It ain't happening. I just proceed to the kitchen since Zimkita doesn't want to get out of the bathroom, argh I hate sharing. As I enter I see Pearl sipping coffee. I immediately get irritated.

Me: "We Jabu wenzani lapho?" (Jabu what are you doing there?)

Jabu is our next door

Advertisement

she's my type of girl. She was sitting across Pearl, busy with her phone. We really connect with Jabu.

Jabu: "Argh just reading books here on Facebook".

Me:"That's better,I thought you've met someone special"

Jabu:(She laughed)"Who?!Me?! Never,I wouldn't,Bakkie would kill me"

Me:"You don't want to be on his bad books,and besides I would tell him if you're dating,that's against the law. We all know".

Jabu:"Whuuu ngeke nje skeem"(never)

I saw Pearl swallowing. I winked at her.....

APHELELE (PHEH)

'Who needs love'

'When I come around flexin'

'i don't need no lovin' from anyone of my ex's'

'I don't need no stress'

I was singing along as I hoped the floor. I moved to the other aisle to take the sign to warn about the wet floor and I put it to where I was hoping. A lady with a child came and stood where it was wet and looked at the cosmetics. I took off my earphones and tapped her shoulder. She looked at me with an attitude.

Me:"Sisi I've just cleaned where you are standing".

Her:"Ohw, so must I wait for the floor to be dry?"

Me:"Yes,as you could see the warning sign"

Her:"Usho ukuthi kumele ngiyeke ukuthenga ngoba nakhu ku-clean Wena?". (So you are saying that I should stop shopping because you're cleaning).

I knew she's got attitude.

Me:"Yebo you must respect my job as I respect you". She chuckled.

Her:"You call this a job,ube wahlulwa iskole,Kahle Bo!"(you failed school,wait a minute). Eish this person.

Me:"Eyy eyy let me leave you cause uhlaza".(you're disrespectful).

I walk away to clean the other aisle. I got a job at PEP as a cleaner,it doesn't pay that much but it's the least. I get 1k a week. I have to pay the bills,I can't be fully dependent on Tebogo. I hear a loud scream at the cosmetics aisle. As I rush to the scene it's the same rude lady. Her child slipped and fell. She was screaming,being dramatic and causing unnecessary attention.

Me:"So much for reading warning signs"

Her:"Please help,she's bleeding".

Mxm some people.

To be continued....

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Things were going well in my life. Work was great, I am a bartender at some club. I earn 4k a month. It's not a lot really. Getting Pheh out of my mother's house was not a bad idea. We are really close to a point where I know every single thing that is going on in her life. Work wasn't hectic since it's still in the daytime. It goes down at nighttime especially in the weekends but I don't work on Sundays.

On my lunch break I decided to go and visit Pheh, not that I wanted to, but I wanted to know her progress.

I've learned a lot about her for this past month, I asked Gogo to let her work cause she was going to be a strain on me financially...

We were eating at Spur...

Me: "What happened to the child Rigby?"

She was telling me about work.

Her: "Ayy I don't know angizingeni bekadelela azange nje ngize ngisamnaka". (I don't care she was rude I didn't entertain her)

Me: "You are so brutal Rigby".

I finished up drinking my milkshake.

"So why are you not at school it's June already?"

Her:"Eyy Modecai NSFAS isn't funding I don't know what really went wrong cause everything was looking up for me".

I was behind that. If we were still at home I wouldn't know that Phelele wants to go back to school,it was disheartening seeing her broken like that but I was also broken like this,I almost lost my sanity because of her father...

Me:"Everything will work out in time don't lose hope".

Her:"Ayy I don't know T".

Me:"We're in this together don't worry".

I stretched my hands to hers...

APHELELE(PHEH)

After lunch with my brother I went back to work. After MaFuze kicked me out of her house I got really close with my brother. The bond we once had is now back. Am really happy. Last week I was supposed to be at school but because NSFAS isn't funding me, I will just wait until some things figure themselves out.

I've decided to let Vanilla go. It was really hard I won't lie but I've gotten used to it. At times I would stop myself from calling her. I deleted her number but it doesn't help that I know her numbers by heart. I looked around the store it was still very much clean so I went to the back where I found Zimbili



eating, she's one of the cashiers. She's too flirty. I sat down next to her...

Mbili: "Baby".

See what I was talking about.

Me: "Am pretty much straight you know".

Mbili: "Who are you trying to fool Phelele Cherry Fuze?". Shit!

Me: "Oh wow you even follow me on social media that's nice".

Mbili: "Of course babe"

Me: "What do you want Mbili?"

Mbili: "Pet names already you know our thing could work out after all. I just want you babe". She started caressing me. The intercom went on:

"Zimbili you are needed at till 4"

Me: "I guess that's when you leave"

Mbili: "Yes but remember what we talked about".

Me: "Yeah whatever Mbili".

Mbili: "I love you babe".

Me: "Just leave already"

She closed her lunchbox,wiped her mouth,blew me a kiss and left....

PEARL

Argh I shouldn't have trusted Pelo yazi. I knew she was too good to be true. I know she has already told Bakkie about Cherry. I hate her right now. Six months left then am out of this place. I just need to hold on one more time. My phone vibrates on my hand since am still on my bed. Sigh. It's Bakkie. Fear kicks in but I answer anyway.

Me:"Ummh hello"

Bakkie:"If you know what's good for you,you will come to my office right now". With that he hangs up. I make my way downstairs passing Pelo singing so horribly.

Pelo:"Ihhhe! Sobohla Manyosi".

I get out,the guard is already waiting for me. The drive is short since am very scared of what is about to happen. As I open the door to his office I am met by a slap that sends me to the floor. It leaves me seeing stars. Bakkies gives the worst punishments.

Me:"Ahhh!!".

He starts kicking me hard on the stomach. I cry out loud cause the pain is too much. He continues kicking me.

Bakkie:"Shut up bitch"

Me:"Am sorry am really sorry".

I hear him walking to the other side of the room. I don't know what he is doing. I feel cold water making contact with my bare skin. Am wearing a dress so it is all the way up now,exposing my underwear. After the cold water I feel a burning sensation. He starts to beat me senseless with his belt. I cry till I can't anymore,am numb. He keeps pouring water and beating me. My voice is hoarse and scratchy. Its like he is deaf from hearing all my cries. At this point I wish I could die. This is not what I signed up for.

Me:"Am sorry"

Bakkie:"You're not,when am done with you,you will regret dating that thing you were dating".

To be continued...

13

MATHAPELO(PELO)

I was really happy about what happened to Pearl I won't lie. I know Bakkie will give her something to remember.

I was with a client,a married man at that. He wasn't bad though. I was lying on my back he was on top of me. Pumping for dear life,as if he was doing the most but in actual fact he was as bad as they come,he even had a small dick,what a waste.

Him:"Ahhh! ahhh! Am cumming baby!".

I was even faking moans.

Me:"Yes,right there".

He ended up cumming,good thing he was wearing a condom.

Him:"Now let's make you cum".

Huff. As if you could. He went down to mufftown. His tongue game was the best. He was eating me out. I got more wet. His thumb was rubbing my clit. He inserted two fingers which were longer than his dick. Pleasure kicked in. My legs started shaking uncontrollably,I squirted all over his face.

Me:"Ahhh!!Damn!!".

He continued finger fucking me till I was done squirting.

Him:"Yes baby that was really great"

Me:"Really great"

Him:"And for that here is your tip".

He handed me a stack of money,it was a lot. I smiled .

Me:"Thank you"

Him:"Anything for a queen like you".

He kissed me on my forehead. I blushed, besides his poor performance in bed he is a real gentleman. This is the very first time someone called me a queen with the work that I do it's rare. He stretched his hand for a handshake. I laughed...

Him:"Menziwa Zulu"

Me:"Mathapelo Mokoena".

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Today I wasn't working night shift so I got home really early. I found mom sitting on the couch watching TV. The house was a real mess,dishes were dirty in a pile at the sink. She didn't cook,there were papers of fried chips. She just bought junk food. The sad thing is that I buy food in this house and I guess I must cook it myself. She really enjoys staying in dirt.

Me:"Makhosazane"

Her:"You've lost your morals you even call me by my name now"

Me:"Ayy Ma-Offer awume kancane tuu. (Mom wait a moment)

Her:"I got an interesting call today".

Me:"From who?". I ask irritated .

Her:"Menziwa Zulu,Menzi's twin brother".

Menzi is Aphelele's father. I was shocked that he had a twin.

Me:"Menzi had a twin kanti?".

My jaw was on the floor.

Her:"Yes apparently he was living in another province with his family". This wasn't good.

Me:"What was he saying?".

This wasn't a friendly call,I can feel it.

Her:"He wants to investigate about his twin brother's case".

Me:"He won't find anything since that case got cold".

Her:"Except he's going to consult".

My heart was beating out of my chest.

Me:"What?!"

Her:"Yes it's that bad"

Me:"So what are we going to do mother  
he can't find out after all these years".

Her:"Oh you should be worried you're the killer here".

I clenched my jaws. I sat down on the couch with my hands  
burying my face. This can't be happening,not now at least.

Me:"This is a mess"...

PEARL

I was still on the floor, covered in blood. I couldn't move, every  
part of my body was in pain. It won't be easy recovering from  
this. That wasn't enough for him,he raped me also. I was even  
too numb to cry nor do anything. After he was done,he told the  
guard to take me to the guest room. They carried me to bed  
and left me there.

Moments later a woman came in with a first aid kit and a bag. I  
wasn't sure what did she want. She carried me to the bathtub.  
The water was warm but it hurts since my wounds were still  
fresh. Why would someone be this brutal.

She started cleaning me up,I would flinch in pain but she was  
really gentle. Tears streamed down,she kept wiping them. She  
got me out and helped me walk to the bed,that was the hardest

to be honest. I couldn't let her carry me since I know am heavy. She dried me up. I don't know what was she using to lotion me but it stings so bad.

Me:"Ouch!". It came out as a whisper.

Her:"Sorry my child it will help you feel better". I just nodded as she continued to lotion my bare body.

Her:"Is he abusing you?".

I figured she was talking about Bakkie, I nodded. She could be my mother. She looked more like me and JR but how. Maybe am hallucinating it can't be. Bakkie walked in,tears formed in my eyes,my heart was beating out of my chest. He crouched in front of me and held my hands since I was sitting at the edge of the bed. My breathing wasn't normal.

Bakkie:"Am sorry my love it won't happen again,I let my anger get the better if me".

He kissed me on my forehead. I was confused. My mother just looked at me,I guess he was just pretending....

To be continued....



14

THE FOLLOWING DAY

APHELELE (PHEH)

Today i was in a really foul mood,I don't know why. I called my brother but his phone rang unanswered. That has never happened before so I was worried about him,he's my brother after all.

As I was cleaning the floor as per usual, someone started walking where it was wet. It was a Sangoma I could tell by her attire. She is a woman,same age as my mother,I could tell by her body. I shouted at her.

Me:"Muntu wenkosi awuboni yini Ukuthi kumanzi lapho?"(Person of the Lord can't you see that it's wet?). I was really annoyed.

Her:"Ncese mtanami bengingaboni". (Sorry my child I didn't notice).

Me:"UwuJesu uhamba emanzini"(You're Jesus you walk on water).

Her:"Intukuthelo nenzondo ehamba emndenini"(Anger and hatred that runs within the family).

Me:"Angizwa Mah?"(I don't hear you mother)

Her:"Yours family is your doom,the bad lucks,the nightmares,the NSFAS problem,your breakup with your Pearl... Someone is behind it, someone within your family is trying to ruin your life because of what your father uMenzi Zulu did to them".

My jaw was on the floor because of what she just told me,and it's all true cause I've been having nightmares since forever,and the NSFAS issue my father being Menzi Zulu and my Pearl. Someone can't just guess all of that. It was shocking.

Me:"How did you know?".

Her:"Ngiyaboniswa,if you want to know more please contact me".

She handed me her card with her number. She is MaNkabinde. I thanked her.

Me:"Okunye Mah Ngyaxolisa ngokuthetha bengingaqondile".(Another thing am sorry for shouting at you it wasn't my intention)

MaNkabinde:"No problem my child just remember to pray for everything in your life".

With that she left. I excused myself and went to the bathroom to tell my brother about this. It was really overwhelming...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

After Menziwa left in the morning I went to put my money in my bank account and went back to my room. I was in a really good mood. I exchanged numbers with Menziwa yesterday. He is old enough to be my father but am not bothered cause I really like him,he facinates me a lot. I was on Instagram looking at Cherry's pictures. She really looks good. I decided to DM her:

"Hey mind if we hang out sometime"

I was just taking my chances. I want us to be together so that I can spite Pearl,to show that these hoes ain't loyal and she doesn't belong to anybody but me and me only after that we will live happily ever after. A call from an unknown number vibrated on my hand. I was really hesitant in answering the call but I did answer anyway.

Me:"Hello"

Voice:"Queen WaseLondon"

Right there I recognized his voice.

Me:"Mageba"

Menziwa:"I miss you Muntu Wami". I blushed, he's such a flirt.

Me:"I miss you too".

Menziwa:"How can I see you kodwa mtomuhle?". I sighed.

Me:"You know my situation kodwa Mageba".

Menziwa:"Don't Worry about that I'll talk to Bakkie and I'll get you out of that place for good".

Oh Wow.

Me:"Wow,thank you so much Mageba"

Menziwa:"You can thank me by going back to school when you get out of there".

Me:"I will I promise".

Menziwa:"Okay then bye".

After he hung up I smile. This could actually work out. Pearl and I could get out of here and actually go start a new life at a new place,I guess Menziwa is worth it after all.

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

My whole mood went sour after my mother told me about Menziwa Zulu. Today am on the night shift hence why am still at home on my bed,drinking my sorrows away. I don't drink but I do when am really stressed. Right now it's that moment. I locked my door to prevent mom from bothering me,am not in the mood for her today. Music was on full blast.

My phone was ringing and "Rigby♥☐" was flashing on the screen. I was not in the mood for her today or anyone for that reason so I let it ring for a while. She keeps on calling I end up answering cause she looks like she ain't giving up.

Me:"What Thembeke?!!". I scream,am annoyed.

Her:"Tjhoo there's no need to bite my head off". I sigh.

Me:"Am sorry,what is it? Am having a bad day".

Her:"You won't believe what happened today a Sangoma talked to me".

Me:"What did it say?".

I was already on my feet.

Her:"She was warning me about a family member that is behind all my misfortune".

Shit!

Me:"Did she tell you who it is?"

I was really she shocked,I was even shaking.

Her:"No,but I must be careful Modecai".

Me:"You're telling me because?"

Her:"I wanted you to help me find out who it is so that they could suffer".

Me:"I thought you suspected me".

Her:"What!No! You're my brother for crying out loud you wouldn't do that to me".

I swallowed. Phelele trusts me,I am betraying her.

Me:"I wouldn't vele"

I say lying through gritted teeth.

Her:"Am still at work we'll talk when I arrive home".

Me:"Alright Sharp".

I hung up. Why am I doing this to my sister? She is innocent for crying out loud. She didn't do anything. Why am I this evil? Am calling this thing off it's totally wrong.. it's no use.. he is dead... Menzi Zulu is deal... I killed him....

To be continued...

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

15

THE NEXT DAY

PEARL

I was still at Bakkie's house, JR's mom had bought me food....

It was home made cause it was dumplings and beans. I don't know when last did I have a home cooked meal. It was really nice talking to her. She was telling me all about herself...

Me:(laughing)"Mama unamaphosiso"(Mom you're lying)

Her:"Am telling you my child"

(Silence)

Her:"You're the same age as my daughter"

Me:"Really where is she?".

Tears escaped her eyes.

Her:"She would be turning 23 this year, someone stole her from me when I gave birth. My very own Ayandiswa, how could someone be so cruel?! It was worse that I had some complications during my pregnancy but I wanted a chance to love her, I would have given her everything and anything but someone denied me that chance".

She was a crying mess now,I just held on to her cause I didn't know what to say to her. This was really heartbreaking honestly,such cruelty.

Her:"6 years later my husband and I had another baby,a boy, I named him Yandiswa just so I couldn't have a reminder of my daughter,6 months down the line we started drifting apart we decided to divorce. He left with Yandiswa cause apparently I was too "depressed" to look after a young baby,I never saw him again. A year later I heard he died after a terrible car accident,when I asked about my child they told me he left with him they don't know to where and when he was coming back that's when he had an accident that took his life. He didn't survive. The police looked everywhere possible but they didn't find my kids Ayandiswa or Yandiswa. Yandiswa is turning 18 this year,I hope they are both safe where they are,that's what I pray for everyday. I miss my kids so bad... I've missed out on a lot of things on their lives"

I didn't know what to say,this could be my mother but how?. I was adopted but why would someone give me away when he/she stole me... Didn't make any sense. It's not my mother....

APHELELE (PHEH)

Today I wasn't working



I decided to meet up with this "Mathapelo" chick who sent me a DM yesterday. I was really bored so why not?

We were at Mac Donald's....

Me:"So what do you do Thapelo?"

Her:"Am a prostitute,you?"

This was shocking, according to her facial expression,I could see that she wasn't joking. She is brutally honest.

Me:"Am a cleaner at PEP. Why are you being honest?"

Her:"Why should I lie?"

Me:"Because you are a sex worker"

Her:"Just because am a sex worker doesn't mean I should lie,I may be anything else but I can't lie like that"

Me:"Wow okay thank you for being honest".

I wish Pearl was honest just like how Mathapelo is honest to me right now...

Her:"Yeah and stop looking me like that you're making me feel weird".

I laughed I didn't notice I was staring at her.

Me:"Sorry Babe"

I saw her blush. This was a really huge turn on for me, I didn't know I still had it in me.

Me: "Am full shall we get out of here?"

Her: "Yeah Sure".

I settled the bill and we walked out. She told me she wanted to use the bathroom so I accompanied her to the toilet, I got in with her. After she was done with washing her hands, I pinned her against the wall and kissed the living daylights out of her. It was really getting heated while our lips collided, after a while of kissing I stopped and wiped her lips with my thumb.

Me: "Am sorry for making you feel weird"

Her: "You are forgiven"

I brought her face to mine then kissed her again.

MATHAPELO(PELO)

I was lying on my back on the bed with her eating my coochie like it's something delicious, like it's her last meal on Earth. I don't know when was the last time I got muffed. She was so good I felt my eyes rolling at the back of my head...

Me: "Ahhh!! Right there Cherry"

She got up and came to kiss me. I could taste myself on her mouth.

After that kiss at the restrooms I knew that I had to sleep with her. Besides taking proof for Pearl that indeed she didn't deserve Cherry in the first place but also she's a really good kisser.

We continued kissing, her left hand was rubbing my boob while the other one went down and rubbed my clit. I was very wet, no one has ever made me this wet before I was dripping. When I didn't expect it she inserted two fingers in me and started fucking me senseless. I was reaching my point with just two fingers. She upped her pace till I squirted all over her hand.

Me: "Ahhh!! Apheee!! Shit!!"

After I reached my climax she got off me and laid next to me. I didn't expect that...

Me: "And then?"

She just kissed my forehead and just looked at the ceiling. Honestly I was confused, was my pussy smelling? But how cause I wash it with cold water, I also eat plain yogurt from time to time.

Her: "Don't Worry there's nothing wrong with you babe I figured I don't wanna rush things, we'll just go with the flow".

This was different I wanted her to fuck me but she didn't, I went through a lot of trouble just to spend the night here only for her to tell me this crap. I even bought a new matching lace

underwear and a bra and then she does this? What a completely waste! This was ridiculous and a huge turn off for a good looking thing like her....

To be continued...

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

## BAKKIE

I went to where I kept my mother and Pearl. I opened the door and they were both deep asleep. As I got closer I noticed that they look alike but the difference is that Pearl is a yellowbone and my mother is dark. She is not my biological mother she's my aunt, my father's sister. After my father died I moved in with her since we both had no one, I lost my father she lost her kids...

I woke my mother up, careful not to wake Pearl up. She opened her eyes, I signalled her to go. She left and went to my office. I kissed Pearl's forehead and followed my mother, I found her sitting comfortably in my couch.

MaZwane: "What's your story with this girl?"

Me: "I love her, but I keep on hurting her".

MaZwane: "Mmmh, you should stay away from her".

Me: "Why?".

She looked at me and indicated that I should sit next to her.

MaZwane: "She's my daughter"

Me: "What?!"

I was beyond the word shocked.

MaZwane: "How old is she turning this year?"

Me:"23 Years"

MaZwane:"How old is my daughter turning this year?"

Me:"23 years... Wait you can't be sure"

Her:"I am sure,I can feel it"

Me:"You can't be sure! Those are just feelings, Pearl is not your daughter".

MaZwane:"Fine! Do a DNA test then,you can't date family".

Me:"Kodwa MaZwane ngiyamthanda".(but MaZwane I love her)

Her:"Akunendaba Kodwa owakini"(It doesn't matter but she's family)

I was beyond the word hurt. I really love Pearl or should I say Ayandiswa. It's been long since I've fallen in love with anyone. I've been gay for a long time but went straight when some idiot decided to break my heart. When I finally found THE MAN IN ME, the girl that I love is family. MaZwane looked at me.

Her:"Senike Nalala?"(Have you been intimate)

(SILENCE)

Her:"Kufanele nigezwe"(You have to be cleansed the both of you)

I nodded...

Me:"Does she know that she is your daughter?"

Her:"No. I didn't want to scare her off".

I nodded.

Her:"At least I've found my daughter"

Me:"And I still haven't found my mother".

Her:"She is better unfound

Advertisement

she stole my daughter! I don't want to see her evil bewitching face!". She was getting angry.

When Ayandiswa got lost it was the same day my mother left. The cameras at the hospital caught her stealing the child, I don't know how she managed to disappear into thin air. The police never found her. Of course they wouldn't since she is a traditional healer. Since today we don't know where she went. As much as she stole my aunt's daughter I can't help but yearn for her love.

Me:"Let me go check if Pearl is up".

MaZwane:"Hamba kodwa unyoko ukhohlakele"(Go but your mother is evil)

This is what makes us fight most of the time cause she really hates my mother but I don't blame her. She has a good heart to accept me even though my mother stole her daughter, I wouldn't do that.

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Since I was too turned off by how Aphelele denied me sex I decided I don't wanna sleep at her apartment. While we were walking to the taxis I took a few snaps with her. Upon arriving at "the house" I called Jabu to come and chill with me on our room that I share with Zimkita. We were sitting on bed, eating snacks..

Jabu: "She didn't fuck you?"

Me: "Nope, that turned me off"

Jabu: "Whuuu that's why I just stick to being straight shame I can't deal".

Zimkita walked in...

Me: "But Aphelele is a good kisser friend"

Jabu: "Usho nje?" (You reckon?)

Me: "Eyy ungidlile loya muntu" (She fucked me)



I saw Zimkita looking at me. I know that her and Pearl are very tight so definitely she will tell her about this. I stood up and went to stand by the window and faked being on a call. I was gonna pause in between.

Me: \*Yes I have arrived\*

\*Ayy Maan Ave usile Wena Cherry\*(You're naughty)

\*Okay I'll come and see you tomorrow\*

\*I love you more\*

I faked blushing and switched off my phone and got back to bed.

Me:(to Jabu)"BekunguAphelele Loyo"(That was Aphelele)

Jabu:"Wow,what does she says?"

Me:"Argh you know the usual"

Jabu:"She really loves you shame"

Me:"I know friend and I love her too"

Jabu:"Ncoah love birds"

Zimkita clicked her tongue and left. Now that was satisfying.

Jabu:"Eyy Mngani umtholile"(Friend you got her)

We laughed. At least Jabu didn't give it away that it is a lie...

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I was at Aphelele's apartment, she wanted me to accompany her to consult at that lady she met. I was very nervous since I am the one behind all of her bad lucks.

I was sitting in the living room since she was still bathing. I saw a paper on the coffee table, it was like a business card of some sort. I took it and "MaNkabinde" was written on it and her numbers beneath her name. Behind the card it was the address. I quickly took the card and put it in my pocket.

I can't risk Aphelele finding out that I am bewitching her. She came to me, she looked really good. Being a Butch really suits her I won't lie. She was wearing a black long sleeve t-shirt, a black jean and also a black Adidas sneakers. She combed her hair cut nicely.

I got up from the couch..

Me: "Ready to go?"

Her: "Yeah, did you see a small card here on the table?"

Me: "Nope I didn't"

Her: "Strange cause I left it right here"

Me: "Are you sure?"

Her:"Yeah am sure,let's look for it"

We started looking for it but we didn't find it obviously...

Her:"There goes our trip".

Me:"Damn!"

Her:"Since I can't find it then we can't go cause the address is on the business card or whatever"

Me:"Hard luck hey"

Her:"I guess we'll just chill then since our trip got cancelled"

Me:"Do you have any beers in here?"

Her:"Yes in the fridge,bring me a Savannah"

Me:"Alright"

I went to the kitchen to get the beers from the fridge...

To be continued...

## MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO (APHELELE'S MOTHER)

Since Aphelele left things have been really hard on my side. I couldn't accept that she is lesbian so now I am suffering. I am very lazy I relied on her to do everything around the house...

I was sitting on the couch watching the TV and eating Doritos and watching "Hawe Ma" on channel 164. Someone knocked on the door... I wiped my hands on the seat of the couch and fixed my robe. I went to open the door and found the shock of my life...

Me:"Menziwa Zulu"

Him:"Makhosazane Ngcobo"

I let him in. I was a bit embarrassed since the house was dirty,there were dirty dishes on the sink and take away containers all over. I didn't know where was he going to sit.

Him:"I've always knew that you are a filthy person"

I kept quiet. I usually have something to say but this man here intimidates me a lot. I just go mute.

Him:"Ekaze ubulinesi elinjani ngempela?"(I wonder what kind of nurse you were)

Before the death of Mageba (Aphelele's father) I was a nurse but later got fired because I did a lot of mistakes since I was an alcoholic by then.... Guilt was killing me and it still does. I have stopped drinking but instead ran into a black snuff..

I just stood there and looked everywhere but him.

Him:"Uphi Umntwana Kamfowethu?"(Where is my brother's child?)

Me:"Akasahlali layikhaya"(She doesn't live here anymore)

Him:"I want to meet up with her,arrange that for me"

I nodded.

Him:"That's the only thing you could do since you fail to clean this house,it's 10 am and you're still in your PJs. Such a disgrace! Ay umfowethu uyakwazi ukubakhetha"(My brother knows how to pick them).

After he left,I started cleaning the house.

APHELELE (PHEH)

I called in sick at work. I wasn't in the mood for work.

I was disappointed about the smell I found on Mathapelo's coochie. It was a huge turn off I won't lie. It was awful but I didn't wanna tell her that. I wanted to be intimate with her but the tin of fish told me otherwise. I really like her and I want to give us a chance but there are things we need to fix first.

We were at the mall together,at ShopRite. She had picked up a few things am glad they are not expensive. I took a double plain yogurt from the shelves and we continued. We went to the cosmetics aisle and we also picked out a few more things then we went to pay. I also bought a few things from Clicks,heard they work on the smell and chaffed thighs... She was too quite for my liking...

Me:"Babe you good?"

Her:"No, can you be honest with me Aphelele?"

Me:"Yeah sure"

Her:"Am I smelling down there?"

I kept quite. She seemed very hurt than being angry.

Her:"Wow,you just could have told me instead of buying these apple vinegar,double plain yogurt and cranberry juice. Am so disappointed in you,I don't think this is going to work out for me

please stay away from me".

She dropped the plastic bags on the floor.

Me:"Just like that you're breaking up with me?"

Her:"I don't remember saying that I love you"

Me:"Wow,but what did I expect from a bitch like you, almost every guy out there knows how you ta...."

I felt my cheek sting. She slapped me twice.

Her:"You've crossed the line. I just saved myself from being associated with toxic people"

Me:"Am better toxic than being a whore".

She left me there....

PEARL

At around 12 in the afternoon Bakkie requested a car to get me to "the house". My scars have healed so I was okay and able to walk. He was very sweet and kind when he was around me,he even told me to stop working till further notice which was weird since I've known Bakkie to be rude and strict.

There are about 50 girls in this building,20 in the Dessert level,20 in the Main Course level and 10 in the Starter level. Bakkie will have to add the girls since some of us are leaving this year,as per agreement. There are 2 kitchens and you can use any of your choice.

I found Zimkita making a sandwich in the kitchen...

Me:"Can you please make one for me too?"

When she turned around she came to me and gave me a tight hug. I missed her so much.

Zimkita:"I was so worried about you,what did Bakkie do to you?"

Me:"Argh,you know the usual but am okay now".

I didn't want to tell her about the MaZwane situation cause I fear for her feelings. Zimkita is very fragile,I don't know how was she gonna react since her parents are not yet found and I think I have found my mother. I don't wanna overwhelm her.

Mathapelo walked in,I saw that she was really surprised to see me here. Her eyes were red and puffy. She had her heels on her hands. She wasn't her usual self,she was just too hurt and quite. I wonder what's wrong with her. She greeted us and proceeded to where she was headed to.



Zimkita:"Aw mudle ntoyakhe".

She said that out loud I think Mathapelo heard her cause she hasn't walked that far away from us...

Me:"What happened to her?"

Zimkita:"Ay I don't know"

Me:"Mmmh"

Zimkita:"She is dating Aphelele"

My heart sank...

Me:"Lonondindwa ungifunani vele?"( What does this bitch want from me?)

Zimkita:"Am also confused babes"

This was really upsetting... I didn't think Aphelele could move on so soon. I thought she loved me and eventually will come back to me... I don't think she knows that Mathapelo also sells her body...

To be continued....

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Today I wasn't feeling well, so I left early at work. To my surprise when I arrived at home it was clean, now that was the first. She even cooked this time around I was really surprised. It is has been a while since my mother cooked. I wonder what made her clean and cook.

I found her watching TV as always but it was better since this time around it is clean...

Me: "Kaze kutheni kwangancola namhlanje" (I wonder why it's not dirty today)

Her: "Besinesivakashi" (We had a visitor)

Me: "I could tell"

Her: "It was Menziwa"

Me: "Bekafunani?" (What did he want)

Her: "Ufuna ukukhuluma no Phelele" (He wants to talk to Phelele)

Me: "Ngoba?" (Why?)

Her: "Ayi angimazi akashongo" (I don't know he didn't say)

Me: "So, uzombona?" (will he see her?)

Her:"Yes,if we don't allow it, it will raise suspicions"

Me:"That can be arranged"

(Silence)

Me:"Sengathi engahlale eza"(I wish he could come more often)

Her:"Ayibo ngobani?"(Why?)

Me:"So that it could stay clean in this house"

She threw her sleeper at me but I ran away, it didn't hit me.

Her:"Ungangijwayeli"(don't get used to me)

Me:"One would swear you were not a nurse"

Her:"Get out of here!"

I went to my room outside...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

What happened today really messed up my mood. I wasn't very much interested in everything that was happening. Any woman big or small,old or young,thick or thin get embarrassed. When someone embarrasses you like that you always feel somehow about yourself,your self-esteem goes low in an instant. I was really embarrassed,I won't lie. I was glad I was alone in the room, wasn't in the mood for Zimkita. It hurt so much that I ended up in tears. I've never had someone tell me those type of things.

I was lying on my bed tears were streaming down my cheeks, I've never felt this embarrassed. I was more hurt than angry. My phone rang, "Baby Boo♥☐" was in display. I ignored it. It was Aphelele. My heart was bleeding. It rang again but this time around it was Menziwa. It rang for a while, I then answered.

Me:"Zulu"

Him:"Mama uyaphila?"(Are you good?)

Me:"Nope"

Him:"Ngoba?"(Why)

Me:"I had a really abusive client today"

I lied for obvious reasons.

Him:"Angithandi uma ungekho right Muntu Wami (I don't like it if you are not okay my person)

Me:"It's life I guess"

Him:"I'll talk to Bakkie so he could let you go"

Me:"When I get out I don't know what to do with my life"

Him:"Everything will work out,as long as ungasaniki labantu ikhekhe Lami (you won't be giving these people my cake)

Me:"Ngiyezwa" (I can hear you)

Him:"Uyathandwa"(You are loved)

Me:"Nami ngiyakuthanda" (I love you too).

He hung up. At least I have something to look forward to.

Aphelele (Pheh)

I really crossed the line when I called Mathapelo a bitch. That was low blow from me considering that she was honest. Now I think I know why Pearl didn't tell me, because she was afraid to be judged. I thought I had everything under control but all went crushing down on me.

They called me at work and told me they need me to come something happened to who was meant to be working today. Since I had no other things to do I went to work to cover for that person. I didn't mind though since all my plans got ruined. They are going to pay me though, for this extra day.

After cleaning I decided to take my lunch break which is 1 hour. I was eating fish and chips on this other place next to where I work.

I have tried calling her, but she didn't answer. I guess it's that bad, I really messed up.

I received a really interesting call. It was from my mother, I was surprised. I hesitated to answer but I did anyway since she wasn't giving up that easily..

Me:"Hello"

Mah:"Kunjani"(How are you)

Me:"Am good"

Mah:"Am also good"

(Silence)

Mah:"Listen, I need you to come home next week Saturday"

Me:"Ohw"

Mah:"Yes, your uncle wants to see you"

Me:"I didn't know you had a brother"

Mah:"It's not my brother, he's from your father's side"

I was shocked.

Me:"I'll see what I can do"

Mah:"Okay take care"

Me:"Bye"

Mah:"And Aphelele I can see you are still confused but..."

Me:"Yeah whatever"

I hung up....

To be continued...

PEARL

I was more angry than hurt. I don't get it really. Who does that? Mathapelo crossed the line. She shouldn't have done that honestly. Dating your best friend's ex? Like who does that?.

After eating with Zimkita I went to my room and got busy on Facebook. Since Aphelele blocked me everywhere I created a fake account just to see what's happening in her life. Since she didn't know it was me, she accepted my friend request. She pissed me off with her actions. I decided to type her a text message:

\*Oh wow I didn't know that you dated prostitutes after all. Mathapelo is the best amongst other prostitutes and am pretty sure she gives it to you real good\*

After typing that I clicked my tongue, and threw my phone on the bed I was really pissed. Someone knocked on the door. It was one of the guards, I find out after opening the door. He had a bouquet of roses with him. I was really surprised... I never expected such thing...

Me: "Yes?"

Guard: "Pearl right?"

I nodded.

Guard: "I was sent to give this to you"

Me: "Whom is it from?"

Guard: "I was told not to tell you"

Me: "Oh... Thank you very much"

After he left I closed the door behind him and looked for a card on the flowers. I found it, it was written:

"Will you go out with me tonight?"

This was confusing honestly. My phone vibrated on the bed. It was a text message from Bakkie:

"Did you receive your flowers?"

I replied:

"Yes I did, only to find roses which by the way makes me sneeze"

"Oh, my bad am really sorry I didn't know you are allergic to roses"

"It's okay, I would love to go out with you tonight"

"Thank you".



I won't lie this was a nice gesture from Bakkie, I wasn't expecting this to be honest... Especially from a heartless person like Bakkie...

**BAKKIE (BAYANDISWA)**

I was really happy that Pearl agreed to go out with me tonight, I would have looked like a fool if she declined my offer. It was sad to find that she is allergies to roses, hope she doesn't get too sick to actually cancel our date. I can't afford that, but next time I'll get her other flowers not roses...

Judge me all you want but what I feel for Pearl is too much to forget about. I know I said I was gonna leave her since she's family but it's too late I have already fallen for her. I think am obsessed with her. She belongs to me and only me, if I can't have her no one will. Family or not it's still the same, that's my future wife, the mother of my soccer team and my future. I will be with her to Infinity and beyond, till death do us apart. I don't care what my aunt says. I know when she sees that I truly love her, she will let us date....

I got a call from an old friend of mine

Advertisement

Menziwa Zulu.

Me: "Mageba"

Him: "Jobe"

Me: "How can I help you today, you want another girl?"

Him: "No, I would like you to give me someone there"

Me: "You're not buying?"

Him: "No, I want my wife to come home to me"

Me: "Who?"

Him: "Mathapelo Mokoena"

Me: "50k"

Him: "Consider it done, when must I fetch her?"

Me: "In 3 days time"

Him: "Pleasure doing business with you"

I hung up. Menziwa is a rich old man, no wonder he didn't complain about the price. Am shutting down "the house". I want to start something legit, if I really want Pearl to be in my life, I need to stop all these illegal things. I can't be arrested and leave her alone...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I was in the kitchen looking for something to eat. We all have turns to cook, who ever cooked today didn't want to cook. She

cooked rice and chicken. The rice had too much water and the chicken was under cooked. I stopped dishing up and made myself a sandwich.

I heard heels clicking behind me, when I turned I was met by the most beautiful person in the world. She was wearing a red sparkling long sleeved dress with a slit that started above the knee. Her weave was tied into a bun. She also wore make up but not too much or too little it was just perfect. She also had matching red sparkling heels and a small black shiny leather clutch bag. I swallowed, I've never seen Pearl look this beautiful. It's like she just got out from the magazine. Words were not enough to describe how beautiful she looked. When she passed me, she left a trail of her perfume that is going to be part of my memories. She didn't even look at me, that hurt a little. I couldn't talk to her, I have hurt her I don't wanna push. I was very certain that she is going on a date, yes she dresses up but you could tell if she was going to a client..

After she left Zimkita came along. I just continued eating and tried to ignore her...

Zimkita: "You're a bitch you know that?"

Me: "We all are"

Zimkita: "I know you don't love Aphelele you just wanna spite Pearl"

Me: "And how is that your business?"

Zimkita: (laughed a little) "That's my friend that's how it's my business, I guess your mother is a bitch too after all they say an apple doesn't..."

I lost it. I stood up and slapped her. I don't know what got into me but I pushed her with force and she hit her head against the cupboard. I was really fuming. I kicked her even when she was down. She didn't have to involve my parents into this, it's still a sensitive topic to me. I don't like it when someone talks ill about them. She only screamed when I slapped her. I crouched next to her and shook her but she didn't wake up. I panicked and checked her pulse, it was there but it was faint. I quickly called the ambulance...

To be continued...

20

5 DAYS LATER

APHELELE (PHEH)

He gave me the picture, there were two boys who looked like they were 18 years or so. They looked like twins, they were identical, you couldn't tell them apart. The picture was in black and white...

Me: "Yena imuphi?" (Who is him?)

Menziwa: "The one on the left"

Me: "I can't tell you apart I wonder how Grandma did it"

Menziwa: "It's easy, your father didn't have a pinkie finger on the left hand look closer"

I looked closer. He is right, my father didn't have a pinkie finger.

Me: "Why?"

Menziwa: "It's a long story I'll tell you another day"

Me: "I wish he was still alive"

Menziwa: "I felt it when his soul left his body. I was at work and had a sharp pain on my neck. I struggled to breath. I felt like my soul was leaving my body. I had a panic attack. My chest was closing in on me, right there I knew he was gone. My twin had

left me. I was admitted for a week. I almost lost my sanity, he was everything to me".

His eyes had tears now, I was also on tears. I wish I spent more time with him.

Me: "I wonder what happened to him?"

Menziwa: "Someone killed him, and I won't rest till I find that person".

My mother shifted uncomfortably on her couch opposite us.

Me: "I course who ever killed my father, that person will never find peace".

Menziwa: "I will make that person suffer, I will rain terror on them"

Me: "They will regret the day they decided to take my father away from me".

My mother's eyes were bulging out, it's like they were gonna come out. Since I wasn't working on Saturday I went home so I could meet up with my uncle. I even found out that my father is or was a twin. When I want to see him I'll just look at my uncle. He said next month they'll introduce me to the Zulu ancestors. Am grateful for my uncle....

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Since it was Saturday I knew am going to have a long ass day at work. It is going to be busy today since there is a DJ who is going to perform tonight. The party will start later on. Right now it was empty, not completely but there were a few people.

A guy came in from the door he looked rich. He was wearing those fancy suits, his was burgundy. He was a white man. He had two bodyguards with him. Everything screamed expensive. He was really good looking, didn't know whites had it in them. He wasn't buff just medium. He came over to where I was and sat on the bar stool. He looked at me like he was searching for something in my soul.

Him: "Can I have your most expensive whiskey?"

Me: "Coming right up"

I served him his whiskey and continued to wipe the glasses with a dry cloth.

Him: "How much are they paying you?"

Me: "Excuse me sir?"

Him: "As a bartender, how much are they paying you?".

He wasn't even looking at me.

Me: "4k"

Him: "That's bad, what if I pay you more?"

Me: "I have no qualifications"

Him: "I know. You will be my P.A since my wife doesn't want any female near me".

Me: "I would appreciate it sir"

Him: "Arrive on Monday morning 08:00 am sharp, to sign your contract, you won't be permanent I wanna see how you do after 3 months then you can sign your permanent contract. Here is my card".

Me: "Thank you sir, I won't disappoint"

He settled his bill and walked out with his bodyguards. He left me a tip of 1k like who does that?. I took his card it was written "Mr Law", it had the address. Things are really looking out for me... I was really happy....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

The doctor walked up to us. We both stood up....

Me: "How is she doctor?"

Doc: "She's fine, nothing was damaged, she'll pull through"

Me: "Can I see her?"

Doc: "Of course"



I stood up and followed him to the ward. She has a huge bandage around her head. She was sitting up and was busy with something on her phone. When she saw, she rolled her eyes...

Zimkita: "Doctor what is she doing her?"

Doc: "I'll give you two some space"

I faked a smile.

Me: "How's your head?"

Zimkita: "Better, am glad you didn't manage to kill me"

Me: "I wish I did" (Sarcasm)

Zimkita: "I will get you arrested you bitch!"

Voice: "No you won't"

When I looked behind me it was Bakkie. Finally he decided to follow me. He had his hands buried in his sweatpants.

Zimkita: "Why not?"

That came to her as a shock.

Bakkie: "Because you insulted her first, she wouldn't have pushed you if you didn't insult her"

Zimkita: "But I.. It..."

Bakkie raised his hand to stop her from talking.

Bakkie: "Are we clear?"

Zimkita: "Crystal"

Bakkie walked out. I stuck out my tongue at her and walked her out also. Zimkita was admitted. She was unconscious for the whole four days. She only woke up yesterday. Am just glad she didn't die. I don't wanna go to jail. I was meant to move out from "the house" two days ago but Zimkita had to ruin things for me so I'll move out tomorrow and boy am glad. Everything seems to be coming together for me.. all I need now is my precious Pearl next to me then I'll be fine...

To be continued...

PEARL

I just came out from the bathroom. I have wrapped a towel around my naked body. He walked in and stood behind me since I was starrng at myself in the full body mirror in the room. He started running his hands on my shoulders, that sent tickling sensations down my spine. His touch affects me a great deal.

He turned me around so I could face him. He was taller than me but not too much. I reach his chin when starrng at him..

Bakkie: "You look beautiful Ayanda"

He has this tendency of calling me Ayanda, he says it suits me well.

Me: "Thank you babe"

Bakkie: "You have changed my life a lot, am very grateful to have someone like you in my life. You are everything a man could ask for and more my love. I don't know what I'll do without you".

I couldn't help but she'd a tear, this was a heart felt moment.

Me: "I'll never leave you babe"

Bakkie: "I will love you forever and a day"

Me: "To Infinity And Beyond"

Bakkie: "To the moon and back"

Me: "Till death do us apart"

He hugged me real tight. My head was resting on his chest. My nostrils were quickly filled in with his cologne. He kissed my forehead. This moment felt right, nothing else mattered now that am with him. This is where my heart really belonged. With him, I never felt at peace but now I could feel peace.

Bakkie: "I will fight for us my love, no matter what it takes!"

Me: "I know my love"

I actually believed him when he said that. After our date night we became really close so much we decided to start our relationship and see where it takes us. I have also moved in with him, he said it's gonna be hard if am far away from him. To be honest it has been a great four days it's like we've known each other for years, he's the best boyfriend. I didn't know he had this side on him. I was really surprised. I switched my phone off from the outside world and focused more on my newly found relationship...

ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

I think ever hates hospitals that I can assure you. My head hurts. Mathapelo really knows how to show you shit. I didn't like this bandage on my head. Speak of the devil she walked in with a nurse. I rolled my eyes. She faked a smile to the nurse, the nurse returned a genuine one and walked out. Bakkie made sure am at a private hospital and I have my own ward.

She sat on the chair next to her bed and pouted her mouth. She really looked cute doing that.

Mathapelo: "How's your head?"

Me: "Oh hunny I feel much better you know". (Sarcasm)

Mathapelo: "I can see, anyway am not here for that big head of yours, am here to tell you that am moving out"

I frowned I wasn't expecting that. That statement shocked me.

Mathapelo: "I won't be invading your space anymore. So to avoid stepping on your toes I decided to move out"

Me: "And go where?"

Mathapelo: "Life is waiting for no one darling, I can't be dishing out forever"

Me: "Ohw"

Mathapelo: "You seem sad that am leaving, are you going to miss me?"

I faked a smile.

Me: "Oh no! Am just glad I won't be seeing your ugly face anymore"

Mathapelo: "The feeling is mutual my love, I'll come see your big head before I leave it's only fair"

Me: "I wish you don't come"

Mathapelo: "Me too hey but am not heartless like you, I'll love to stay and chat but I have to go pack. Toodles!"

She stood up and left. The jean looks good on her. My heart is bleeding, am really hurt since Mathapelo is leaving. I will be left alone. Pearl hasn't called me to check up how I am doing let alone called me... I last saw her the day she went to her date... Am really worried, what if something bad happened to her?.. it's not like her.. her phone is also off. I need to tell Bakkie about this..

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO (APHELELE'S MOTHER)

Aphelele had to rush somewhere. That gave Menziwa the chance to intimidate me. I didn't like this one bit. The whole revenge and curse thing was getting to me. You could easily see that Aphelele meant every word that she said. Karma is a bitch

and knows each and everyone's address. I guess it remembered mine. Now I have to suffer for my sins.

His look was really uncomfortable. I have to stop panicking cause I could see that Menziwa is getting suspicious. I don't want him to be on my case cause I could easily give it away...

Menziwa: "When the ceremony happens next month I would like you and Tebogo to be there"

Me: "Is it necessary for us to be present?"

Menziwa: "Yes, unless you had other plans"

Me: "Oh no! I don't. Don't worry I'll be there"

It's going to be hard going to the Zulu residence. My mother inlaw hates me to the core, but I don't care about that old hag. I know she is going to be on my throat for the longest of time. Traditionally I was still Menzi's wife since he paid lobola for me.

Our lives were perfect, we were planning to get married, had our future planned ahead of us. Things changed when i started seeing him act differently, thought he was cheating, only to find out that he is molesting my son. My only son. When Tebogo's father remarried and left me I vowed that Tebogo will not suffer only for him to suffer on the hands of the person who claimed to love us. I didn't know that he was a sick bastard.

In Menziwa's eyes he is this perfect human being but to me and Tebogo, he is a sick pervert. I thought he loved and accepted Tebogo as his own but I was wrong. If I didn't help in killing and covering the murder of that bastard it would have seemed like I knew or supported what happened to him..

I couldn't be a bad mother to Tebogo. He was old enough to understand what was happening around him. I had to put my child's freedom first over my happiness. He comes first after all....

To be continued...



TWO DAYS LATER

MATHAPELO (PELO)

My suitcases were standing by the door. I was happy to be moving out. I was supposed to leave yesterday but Menziwa was busy. At last am leaving this place, am gonna use this chance to better my life. Not for me but for Pearl also. I am mostly doing this for her. She's the only thing that makes sense in my life. Speaking of her, it's been long since I last saw her. Jabu says she has moved in with Bakkie, but I don't wanna believe her. Why would Pearl move in with Bakkie? I mean the guy is toxic. I've been trying to call her for a while now but her phone is off.

I've been ignoring Phelele for the last few days. I don't want anything to do with her. She's been sending a lot of messages so much that I decided to block her. I don't know how Pearl dated her.

I stare around the room. Yeah am finally getting out of here. I have sweet and bad memories here. It's just a few more minutes then I'll be gone. I shed a few tears. I don't know where am going but Menziwa said I'll live with him until he finds me a place to stay.

Bakkie walks in and leans against the door. I know what this means, Menziwa has arrived to pick me up. We will start at the hospital to see Zimkita then straight to my new life. Yesterday I went to every room in "the house" just to say goodbye to everyone, we were all a family after all. It was hard for Jabu to say goodbye but I promised her that once life opens doors for me I'll come back for her. I will keep in contact with her though.

I took my two bags and Bakkie took the big suitcase. My bags weren't enough to pack everything but I got the important things and left some clothes.

Bakkie: "Got everything?"

Me: "I guess so"

Bakkie: "I will send you 4k every month till you are fit enough to stand on your own. It was nice having you. It's the least I could do"

Me: "Thank you very much, that's so thoughtful of you. Thanks"

To that particular person who changed Bakkie you deserve a standing ovation. I never knew Bakkie to be this sweet. Am shocked honestly... We make our way out...

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I woke up really early today. I couldn't be late. I got one shot at this. I risked a lot of things for this job. I resigned at the club on

Saturday and they paid me for the three weeks I've worked. I don't know how I woke up since yesterday I spent my pay and the tip money from Mr Law with my friends. I was wasted, I don't even know how I got home from the tarven. I have a really banging headache. I even scored some coochie yesterday. She will see herself when she wakes up. I was too nervous to eat breakfast. MaNgcobo was really happy for me.

By 07:30 am I was already sitting at the reception. It is a law firm company, I don't belong here. I guess I got be comfortable with this type of life. The receptionist gave me coffee and chocolate muffins. They were really delicious. She is a really kind lady with a contagious smile. She's what I call a melanin queen.

I went over to her as she called me over. I was wearing formal. This is a really big day for me. Her name tag told me her name is Busi.

Busi: "Mr Law is expecting you, let me take you to him".

She walked in front of me and led me to the elevators which took us to the top floor where his office is situated. She knocked on the door and opened.

Mr Law was sitting on his chair behind his table. Busi nodded and left. I had my C.V with me. He indicated that I should sit down. I sat across him, the table was in between us.

Everything in this office screamed expensive. It was charcoal in colour with a little white here and there. Today he was wearing a blue suit. He looked at me for a while then greeted me. That was embarrassing of me since I didn't greet him first. He handed me a bunch of papers I guess this is my contract.

Mr Law: "I'll get straight to the point, that is your contract, read through it and if you don't like some things we'll change them. Am going to need your C.V though".

I read through it. I will be working from 08:00-17:00 everyday with breaks included. I won't be working on Sundays. I would earn 8.5k per month tax included. I took a pen and signed on the dotted lines, I was more than happy about the contract.

Mr Law: "Well that went well, by the end of the day you'll get your copy of the contract, I'll call someone to come and show you around. You'll start working today, welcome to the team."

He took the phone to call someone. This is a great opportunity for me, I won't do anything to jeopardize it....

APHELELE (PHEH)

Mondays. I hate Mondays. Today I was working. The worst thing that could happen to me. I was moping the floors per usual. Zimbili came to me, she still has that stupid crush on me. I took off my earphones and gave her my full attention.

Mbili: "The Manager wants to see you"

Me: "Why"

Mbili: "I don't know babe"

I had a really bad feeling about this. I haven't been called to the manager's office since forever. I wiped my hands on my uniform and walked to the manager's office. I knocked and walked in. She was still on the phone so I sat down on one of the two chairs across her. She said goodbye on the phone and gave me her full attention...

Me: "Good morning"

Manager: "Yes Aphelele"

Me: "I was told you wanted to see me"

Manager: "Yes, am gonna have to let you go"

My heart sank... I wasn't expecting this...

Me: "What! Why?"

Manager: "Customers have been complaining about your attitude a lot of times to me"

This can't be happening....

Manager: "Am sorry, you have to start looking for a job. Don't worry I will give out a good reference about you"

Me: "Why me?"

I couldn't help but shed a few tears. What am I going to do with my life now? Am definitely cursed.

Manager: "I will need your name tag and the uniform back"

Me: "Can't you reconsider?"

Manager: "No I can't . You will get your money though for this time you have worked since you didn't finish this month"

Me: "I understand, thank you for the opportunity"

Manager: "I wish you all the best in life".

I stood up and walked out of her office. I went to the toilets and cried silently. I couldn't call Tebogo cause we've been fighting a lot lately so much that he stopped supporting me financially. How am I going to pay the rent? Don't get me started with food. I don't know what am going to do... This job was supposed to be my break through since I couldn't study... I was really broken by this....

To be continued...

## PEARL

Bakkie left to take care of his businesses. He has assured me that he is shutting down "the house". Am glad he is cahnging without me telling him to change. If a person really loves you he/she will change just because of love without the need for you to tell him/her to change.

The house really gets lonely when Bakkie is not around. Since I was bored I decided to give my phone my full attention. Notifications flooded in and missed calls from J.R, Mathapelo and Zimkita.

I decided to call Zimkita first, just to check up on her. She answered on the second ring ....

Me: "Cuz"

Her: "Don't cuz me Wena"

Me: "Hao"

Her: "Kwenzekalani ngawe vele Pearl?"(What's happening to you?)

Me: "I don't follow"

Her: "First of all where are you?"

Me: "I.... Umhh... At Bakkie's house"

Her: "Entlek ubekwa yini lapho?" (What are you doing there?)

Me: "Me and Bakkie we ummh.... Seeing each other"

Her: "And you didn't see the need to tell me?"

(Silence)

Her: "Yazi Wena Pearl uselfish, uyazi ukuthi ngisesbhedlela? No, you don't know! Now that Bakkie is in your life you don't care about anyone but yourself. Did you check up on J.R? No, you didn't. Family comes first. I don't even like this relationship of yours".(You know Pearl you are selfish, do you know am in hospital)

I kept quite, that was a mouthful.

Me: "What landed you in the hospital?"

Her: "Ayy Tsek! Awunendaba nje" (You don't care!)

Me: "Yeah vele anginendaba, uyinja yakomunye umuzi vele" (I don't care, you're a dog of another house)

Her: "Wow! Really now? You had to bring that up? I know we are not related, you guys too me in but that wasn't necessary! You know Pearl there's nothing I wouldn't do for you and J.R but what am I saying? You're blinded by love! When all of that comes crashing down on you I won't be there to pick up the pieces of your broken life!"



Me: "You are just jealous of my relationship! Or you wanted Bakkie?!"

Her: "You know what don't ever call me again!"

Me: "I won't"

I hung up. Zimkita was just being unnecessary. I won't let her get in the way of my happiness. I really love Bakkie. Maybe she's jealous of my relationship

Advertisement

it's highly possible since we're totally strangers... What was I thinking!

BAKKIE (BAYANDISWA)

All 47 girls were lining up. We took them to some warehouse. They were all dressed up. I was selling them to another buyer who wanted prostitutes. 9 are from the starter level, 18 from the main course level and 20 from the dessert level.

Jason was walking and checking them out. Jason Law is another rich white guy who wanted the girls. He is in a lot of legal businesses just so the richness won't be questioned, he even has a law firm

Jason: "I expected 50 girls from you"

Me: "I know, they escaped but you don't have to worry about that"

He was talking about Mathapelo, Pearl and Zimkita. I decided not to sell Zimkita since she is very close to Pearl.

Jason: "I will pay for them once I get them"

Me: "I totally understand"

He nodded and continues walking around the girls. He came with a truck from his trucking company to load the girls in. I'll be getting 240k for the girls. From the starter level each girl costed 10k, from the main course level each girl costed 5k and from the dessert level each girl costed me 2k.

I will use this money to start a legit business that could generate me more money. He had already sent the money to my account, he just came to collect the girls. Jason came with 10 bodyguards incase something goes wrong or the girls run away. He called over to his guards..

Jason: "Load them up"

The guards took the girls to the truck. Their things will be fetched later on. We closed the deal with a handshake.

Jason: "It was a pleasure doing business with you"

I nodded at him. He left together with his guards. They came with four cars including the truck.

I hired people to clean the building where the girls lived. Am going to be a landlord since am no longer using it. I walked up to my car and drove off, this is my new life.....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I was really heartbroken when I left the hospital. Zimkita was really sad to see me leave. She will be discharged in two days time.

I was checking out my apartment with Menziwa. It was big enough for two people to occupy it. It had two bedrooms which had their own bathroom, a kitchen and a living room joined with a balcony. We are at the top floor. You could tell by the interior designs that it is mad expensive. I didn't even know how much is the rest. It had all the furniture all I had to do is move in.

We passed by the mall though and got all the groceries of things that am going to need and did a little shopping. After getting everything where they belonged, we made ourselves comfortable on the fur rug with a throw covering us. The weather wasn't bad but I guess we wanted this. We were watching "The Notebook" on the TV and had all kinds of snacks. I didn't know an old man like Menziwa does romantic things like this.

He was leaning by the couch and I was in between his legs with my back against him. We have changed our clothes to something comfortable. He had brought a night bag. He kept leaving wet kisses on my neck. We also had wine so it messed up with my hormones. He bit me a bit....

Menziwa: "I have to tell you something"

Me: "Yeah sure"

Menziwa: "I've got a wife and three kids"

I acted surprised and hurt. I knew he was married just didn't think he had kids....

Me: "Oh"

Menziwa: "Don't worry about her, she knows about you and I"

Me: "She does?"

I was shocked. What kind of woman allows that?

Menziwa: "I was serious about us Thandolwami. Am going to make you my second wife and you will give me a soccer team".

I swallowed to the last part. I don't want to be married to Menziwa! I want Pearl! Only Pearl! I don't want to have a child with him let alone his soccer team!

Menziwa: "We will start making our soccer team now".

With that said he turned me around and started kissing me passionately...

To be continued....

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

24

THE NEXT DAY

APHELELE (PHEH)

The drama from yesterday really messed me up. Everyone knows that since the unemployment rate is high, you are very lucky to get a job. I am heartbroken to lose my job, I don't know how am I going to pay rent. In a week it's month end.

I need to find a place to stay. I decide to swallow my pride and call my brother for help... It rang for a while.. I didn't even think he will pick up...

Tebogo: "Yah?"

Oh wow, but what did I expect?

Me: "Unjani Bhuti?" (How are you brother?)

Tebogo: "Am at work Aphelele ufunani?" (What do you want?)

I swallowed, this is going to be harder than I thought. I tried hard not to cry.

Me: "Bhuti I got fired today". I couldn't help it I just cried.

Tebogo: "Eyy eyy Musa ukungirasela tuu! You're going to make me lose a job that is paying 8k with those tears of yours" (Don't make noise for me)

Me: "I need your help bhuti for thus month only". I sniffed.

Tebogo: "What did you do that made you get fired?"

Me: "I... I don't know, the Manager said I was rude to the customers"

Tebogo: "Inkinga zakho ungazenzi ezami, ngikuthumile ukuthi delela ama customer? Buka le attitude yakho ikubekephi manje! Yazi Wena awusisabi isdina! Kmele ngabe let call eyokungitshela ukuthi uzongifakela imali. You're useless mxm! Fana netyama lakho! Ngenza Kahle ngali...." (Don't make your problems mine! Did I send you to be rude to customers? Look at where your attitude landed you now! You're not afraid of being a nuisance! This call meant to tell me that you will send me money. You're like your father! I did well when I...)

The line went off. I didn't have enough airtime. I doubt he will call me back. The things he said stung my heart. I don't think I was going to listen to him saying all of that, am glad the airtime got finished before he said more.

I went to my bedroom and cried myself to sleep...

PEARL

When Bakkie came home last night, I asked him about Zimkita being at the hospital he told me the whole story. I really can't believe Mathapelo hit her! How could she?!

We were both naked in bed, I was lying on his chest. He was gently brushing my hair with his hands, running his fingers through my cornrows. The silence was comfortable. He said he will go to "the house" later on...

Bakkie: "Babe"

Me: "Mmmmh?"

Bakkie: "I was thinking, since Zimkita will be discharged tomorrow

Advertisement

why not come and live with us, I've seen that you too are very close".

I rose up from his chest quickly..

Me: "No!"

I think I shouted too loud cause he gave me a questioning look.

Bakkie: "Why?"

Me: "Babe Zimkita will be fine with the other girls, there's no need"

Bakkie: "But you know am no longer running "the house". I gave the girls up, I would get her an apartment but I don't have a lot of money now"

Me: "Argh! Just take her where you took the other girls"



Bakkie: "Are you sure?"

Me: "Yes... I... Umm.. am sure"

Bakkie: "Do you want to see her before she leaves?"

Me: "No, I'd rather not"

Bakkie: "Oh Okay let me go take a bath"

Me: "Okay".

Bakkie: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

I really care about Zimkita, I took her from the orphanage because we had a strong bond but what I feel for Bandiswa is beyond human understanding. I see our future written in the stars. I can't let her stay with us! With her newly found jealous, she's gonna take Bakkie away from me and I can't let that happen! She's bitter! I don't want anything to do with her!

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I was really mad at Aphelele! She messes up her source of income then requests money from me? Am not her ATM! My anger got to me so much that I ended up saying things I shouldn't say. Am glad I couldn't finish that sentence, otherwise I wouldn't have been here.

I can't be arrested nor have a criminal record! I will lose everything!

It wasn't busy at work today. I started working yesterday and everything is coming along fine, the work environment isn't toxic. Everyone seems quite friendly. Jason is at his office with a client. Jason is Mr Law, Jason Law. I got that information yesterday.

My cellphone rang, I didn't recognize the number so I let it ring. It rang again and I answered...

Me: "Tebogo hello"

Voice: "Yazi wena mfana uyadelela!" (You know you are rude boy!)

Me: "Who am I talking to?"

Voice: "Since everything is going well for you, you have forgotten who helped you! Ngifuna imali yami Tebogo or else all the curses upon your sister's life will come your way! Don't test me!" (I want my money Tebogo).

It was the woman who helped me bewitch Aphelele, KaMangethe.

Me: "Ayy awume kancane" ( wait for a moment)

KaMangethe: "Ihhhe!! Usungikhohliwe ukuthi ngubani mina?" (Have you forgotten who I am?)

Me: "Ever since am earning 8k suddenly everyone wants money from me ayy ninesdina shame! Ngikukweleda malini gogo?"  
(You're a nuisance! How much do I owe you Grandma?)

KaMangethe: "Ihhhe! Kophela Sofana! Yekela! Angisayifuni kwaleyomali yakho!" ( It will end we'll be the same! Leave it! I don't want your money anymore)

Me: "Ayy! Ayy! Manje ubusafonelani? Mxm!" (Why you were calling me then?)

I hung up. I was really angry. It hasn't been a month since I've started working but everyone wants money from me! Aphelele quit her job because of my money and now this hag is calling me? Mxm!!!....

To be continued...

25

## MATHAPELO (PELO)

Early in the morning Menziwa left. He had some business to attend to. He left money though in case I get bored...

Tomorrow we are going to a dealership to get me a car. This guy is really serious about wanting us to work. I wish I had feelings to accommodate him but the heart wants Pearl not him ..

Today I was feeling really lazy, so I ordered in breakfast... Am not surprised we had sex the whole night yesterday with Menziwa. I just showered and made myself comfortable on the couch. I was wearing my sweatpants and a hoodie with nothing underneath... The weather was a bit cloudy today. My food arrived and it was heavenly. As I was munching it, my phone rang, to my surprise it was Pearl..

A smile formed on my face...

Me: "Babe"

Pearl: "Why did you beat Zimkita up?"

Me: "How are you my love?"

Pearl: "Yazi Mathapelo ngikwatile" (You know Mathapelo am angry)

Me: "I know babe but you can't be mad at me"

Pearl: "Umshayeleni uZimkita?" (Why did you beat Zimkita up?)

Me: "Can we talk about that over lunch?"

Pearl: "Ummmmh..."

Me: "It's all on me"

Pearl: "Okay"

Me: "I'll text you the time and place"

Pearl: "Bye, I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

My heart melted and I hung up. I wish she said that because she truly loves me not because am her friend.

Just when I was about to get up I felt something stinging my cheek. He bought me up and gave me two more slaps. I didn't know when he came back and why ...

Menziwa: "Ukhuluma ukhululekile angithi angikho!

Ngizokushaya yezwa Ntombizakithi! Nonsense!!!" (You talk freely because am not here! I will beat you up Ntombizakithi!!)

He left me there and went to the bedroom. I was confused to even utter a single word... It has only been a day and already he is laying his filthy hands on me! He has given me more reason to leave him once I get what I want!.... I can't stand this!....

BAKKIE (BAYANDISWA)

Today I was out looking for business ideas but nothing interested me. I will look more into it tomorrow. I decided to come back home cause I know that Pearl will be bored. On my way in, my mother (aunt) called me...

Me: "Mawami" (Mom)

MaZwane: "You can't run away forever"

Me: "Am not running away"

MaZwane: "Umntwana wami ngimbona nini?" (When am I seeing my baby?)

Me: "I'll come visit"

MaZwane: "Cha angisho wena ngisho uAyandiswa" (Am not talking about you am talking about Ayandiswa).

My heart sank to my knees. I sat in the couch at the living room.

Me: "Ngisa busy okwamanje sobona ngenyanga ezayo" (Am still busy now we'll see next month)

MaZwane: "Okay Bubu I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

MaZwane: "Bye"

Me: "Bye"

My mother or aunt doesn't know that am dating my cousin. I know it's wrong but it is what it is, when it's time I will tell her. Right now I need to propose to Pearl first so that no matter what happens she won't be able to break up with me. I would marry her next week but I don't want to scare her.

I stood up and went upstairs to the bedroom. The water in the in suit bathroom indicated that she's in the shower. I laid on the bed and saw her phone next to me, it was still on and it looked like she was on WhatsApp. I looked at the number that she was chatting to... It was saved as "ILoveYou♥☐". I took out my phone then copied the number. Mine was saved as "Bakkie". That angered me more. It's like something rose up from within. As I was reading through the conversation I saw that they has a lunch date today hence why she's bathing. My heart was beating fast, I felt like I was having a heart attack. Tears threatened to come out. I can't believe Pearl is cheating on me! I threw her phone against the wall. It broke into pieces... It was like I was breaking my heart into pieces... I groaned in frustration.

Me: "Fuck you Pearl!!!"

## ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

I wanted to go home. Hospitals can be draining private or not but they still draining. I was attempted to call Pearl but the anger from within didn't allow me to. What she said hurt me cause talking about the orphanage is still a sensitive topic to me. A lot happened at the orphanage....terrible things...

I was feeling much better now even though I still have the bandage on. Since I was bored I checked the statuses on WhatsApp. Pearl's last seen was 12:34pm. Mathapelo posted a picture of her.. She was wearing all black... It looks good on her... She captioned the picture

"If Harry Potter taught us anything it's that no one should live in the closet♥☐"....

I smiled at the fact that it has something to do with the LGBT community...

The nurse walked in with my food.. She is really nice unlike other nurses... She told me her name is Petal... She is a white woman... A beautiful one at that...

Petal: "Food for my favourite patient"

I smiled.

Me: "Thank you"

Petal: "The doctor will discharge you tomorrow"



Me: "At last!"

She laughed... She had a really bad laugh... I ended laughing as well...

Me: "Your laugh isn't something I would like to hear everyday"

She placed her hand on her chest and made a sad face.

Petal: "Wow, you just broke my heart"

Me: "Am just being honest"

Petal: "Oh really? Your face isn't something I would like to see everyday am glad you're leaving. Can it be tomorrow already?"

She had her hands on her hips. White looked good on her. I just laughed at her... She turned around and attempted to leave but I stopped her..

Me: "Wait, aren't you gonna feed me?"

She came to me and took the bowl .. it was cereal... She started feeding me. I didn't think she would feed me, I was just teasing her... I was laughing the whole time. She was pretending to be mad and she somehow looked funny doing that. She purposely spilled the cereal on me. She acted surprised.. she actually grinned after that...

Petal: "Oops!"

Me: "Really now?"

I rolled my eyes at her. She laughed at me..

Petal: "I'll go get something to clean you up with you"

Me: "You're so childish"

She quickly ran out.. She is really a ball of fire... Am going to miss her when I get out of here....

To be continued...

26

A WEEK LATER

APHELELE (PHEH)

She banged the door. She tried to get in but it was locked. I knew what was next... Shouting..

MaFuze; "Awuvuki yini?! Awuvuke Maan! Isqalekiso sengane!! Uzoclean nini mawusalele vele? Ungangiciki!!" (Aren't you waking up? Wake up Maan! Curse of a child!! When will you clean when you're still sleeping. Don't irritate me!)

Me: "Ngiyeza" (am coming)

I get up from the bed wiping my tears. I got kicked out from my apartment so I moved out and went back home. I told my uncle (Menziwa) and he promised to find a place for me, but at the moment am stuck with my mother. She has been emotionally and mentally abusive towards me ever since I came back.

Anything I do is not good enough! I have also given up on going back to school, it's useless. If only I went to MaNkabinde to find out who is bewitching me, am starting to think it's my mother. Maybe things could have been better for me. Everyone seems to be turning their backs on me, I don't want to start with Tebogo. He really hates everything that's go to do with me these days.

I change into my dress and go to the kitchen. I look at the dirty dishes in the sink with pots and sigh. Mah is sitting on the chair drinking tea. She looks at me...

Mah: "Namhlanje sizowasha izingubo zokulala" (Today we'll be washing blankets)

I sighed. It's going to be a long day...

Me: "Zikuphi?" (Where are they?)

Mah: "Ziphandle, kodwa kumele uclean kuqala nasendlini ka Tebogo nakhona" (The blankets are outside but you have to clean first and also clean Tebogo's flat)

Me: "Umsebenzi ongaka!" (So much work!)

Mah: "Do you have something else to do?"

I kept quiet and start washing the dishes. I know I'll be the only one washing the blankets, she'll be having stories by then. I don't want to clean for Tebogo! He doesn't even respect me for me to clean for him.. Total disrespect...

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Work has been great, am enjoying what I do. It's not a stressful job. Everything is going very well. Yesterday I got paid 2k for my time being here. I can safely say am happy where I am in life.

Jason's wife walks in and comes to me, she's really beautiful I won't lie and I've seen her here before but she's not someone who comes regularly which is a good thing. I smile at her...

Me: "Morning Mrs Law"

Bella: "Good Morning, is my husband here?"

Me: "He's in, should I tell him you're here to see him?"

Bella: "Oh no! Am not here for him but for you"

My heart started beating fast. What does she want from me?  
Does she know?

Me: "Oh"

She fixed her cleavage then she indicated that I should come closer so she can whisper to me. She is smelling real good. I leaned over.

Bella: (whispering) "Is Jason cheating on me? Have you seen any woman with him before?"

I laughed nervously.

Me: "No Mrs Law I haven't other than clients I haven't. Am sorry"

She nods and take out a piece of paper and write her numbers then she gave them to me.

Bella: "Okay thanks if you see something please call me and don't say a word about me coming here"

She gave me a naughty side smile then left. She was wearing a really short dress, she didn't even have her ring on. She has a really good slim body. White women aren't that bad after all.

Once she leaves I quickly go inside Jason's office and locked the door behind me. He stands up and comes to me.

Jason: "And?"

Me: "Your wife was here, asking me if I have seen you with a woman before"

Jason: "And?"

Me: "I denied everything about knowing you to be with a woman"

Jason: "That's good then"

Me: "I guess so"

He pulled me closer, pinned me on the wall then started kissing the daylight out of me....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I was watching my favourite show on TV when he came by and kneeled down in front of me. I wasn't moved.

Menziwa: "Am sorry"

(Silence)

Menziwa: "I mean it, it's been a week with you not talking to me and I really hate silent treatment. Can you at least shout and scream at me? Cause right now I don't know what you are thinking. Kubuhlungu babe. I will never do it again. It was wrong in the first place to lay my hand on your but I promise not to hurt you like that again my love, it was stupid of me. I really want us to work" (it hurts).

I just look at him. He takes my hand and make me stand on my feet. He snakes his hands on my waist and squeezes me a little.

Menziwa: "I was mad thinking that you're cheating on me. I let my insecurities lead me on. Am really sorry, I know what goes down on a prostitution house and it's not easy. You trust me with your heart and I need to trust you with mine. I want to make you my wife. You won't marry someone who will hit you. I must protect you instead of hitting you. I have fallen deeply in love with you. When you called her babe I thought you are talking to a man and THE MAN IN ME couldn't allow that, I will have to die first then to let somebody else love you, am sorry my love."

I stand on my tip toes and hold him on his neck. The last part really got to me, it's gonna be a really sticky situation to get out of. After he hit me, I didn't go out to meet up with Pearl I was too angry. I've been ignoring him for the entire week. He was

always trying to talk to me but I wasn't budging. We didn't even go to the dealership to get my car. Pearl's phone is off ever since that day, I don't know what's going on.

Me: "I forgive you"

Menziwa: "Thank you"

Me: "I love you"

Menziwa: "I love you more".

He started kissing me... I've missed his lips...

To be continued...



27

PEARL

He was standing by the door. He looked at me.

Bakkie: "Would you like something from the mall?"

I shook my head no.

Bakkie: "I'll see you later, I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

He left. Things have been rocky between Bakkie and I. You could sense the tension between us. Mathapelo almost ruined things for us.

He broke my phone that day, said he will buy me another one when I need it cause clearly I don't know how to use it. I get bored most of the time cause he's busy these days. I have been keeping myself busy with books and what not. I can't go out as well, Bandiswa has controlling tendencies these days but am not complaining since it shows that he loves me and cares about me.

As am about to sit down a knock comes thru. I wonder who it might be since Bakkie isn't here. When I open up I am met by MaZwane. I don't know why but I quickly run into her arms. I have really missed her, which is awkward, how do you miss your boyfriend's mother?

She gladly hugs me back, for a moment overwhelms me and I want to cry but I feel safe in her arms. She has a warm hug that tells you everything will be okay, everything will be fine. Today I finally feel a mother's love that I've always yearned for. After a while I let go of her, she has tears in her eyes. She leads me to the living room and we sit down on the couch.

Me: "Uyaphila Mah?" (How are you Mah?)

MaZwane: "Am good baby how are you?"

Me: "Am good"

MaZwane: "Am so happy to see you baby"

Me: "Me too"

MaZwane: "We need to talk baby"

ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

He slapped me again, I fell down and he started kicking me in the stomach. This is not life. I can't be living like this. He spat on me he got out and locked the door behind him. This meant I have to sleep with Jabu's dead body for the whole night.

After I got out of the hospital Bakkie bought me here, where all the other girls are. At this moment I prefer "the house" other than this place. This is hell! No human being deserves to live like this. We are treated like animals! Our cries and screams are

falling on deaf ears. I never thought I'd want to die like I want to die right now. Life is no longer worth living for.

Jabu was raped by 3 guards last night. It was a traumatizing scene to witness. She was too weak, she didn't make it... They haven't taken the body.. she was lying there on the mattress lifeless. I can't go on like this. This scene could make one lose their sanity. Am not emotionally, mentally and physically strong. I just want this all to end.

I get up and go and lie next to Jabu. I shake her dead body.

Me: "Why!? Why!? Don't leave me! I can't do this! I can't face these devils alone! I need you to hold me and tell me everything is okay!"

I broke down. Where is Pearl when I need her the most? Where is she when am falling apart? When everything comes crashing down on me? I hug my legs and rock myself. I think am losing myself and this dead body seems to be making the situation much worse. I hope J.R will be fine without me. They took our phones so I can't even say goodbye to him. I can't do this! I can't be fighting demons each and every day. Where is Petal? Where is Mathapelo? My parents? I have no one. Those who I thought had my back always have turned their backs on me.

The door unlocks and two guards walk in. They look at me with those nasty eyes. They drag me by the legs and tear my dress

off and start penetrating me, having their way with my body. What has become of the men of this world, don't they have sisters?mothers?

My vision gets blurry as I see them taking a part of me....

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

Deep down in my evil heart I love my daughter. Aphelele is my life. I love her, that is without a doubt but I can't help feel like I owe it to Tebogo. Aphelele's father took a part of him that no one cannot replace. Not even me. I fear treating Aphelele good cause it will seem like am choosing her over my son. Aphelele is emotionally stronger than Tebogo, he's too weak. He has a really fragile heart.

Menziwa's car drives in and I quickly stand up and take the dish cloth and wipe the dishes that Aphelele left to dry. He gets out of his car, talks to Aphelele outside then comes in the house. He knocks and I shout come in. He walks in intimidating as always. I offer him a drink which he declines then sits on the chair.

He looks at me and I look everywhere besides him...

Menziwa: "How are you?"

Me: "Am good"

That was unnecessary since we have greeted each other.

Menziwa: "Next week we are doing the ceremony"

Me: "Am aware of that"

Menziwa: "You guys will arrive on Thursday"

Me: "That's fine by me"

Menziwa: "Also after the ceremony Aphelele will come and live with me"

That is not good...

Me: "No problem if she has agreed"

Menziwa: "She has agreed don't worry"

Me: "Okay then"

Menziwa: "I'll be on my way then, be well"

Me: "Thanks for stopping by"

Menziwa: "Oh trust me, I didn't want to"

Me: "Must be nice".

I faked a smile. He stands up.

Menziwa: "Really nice"

To be continued...

## APHELELE (PHEH)

Honestly I wanted the week to end already. I want to meet my family where I could feel a sense of belonging. I hope they will accept me and not treat me like trash, I can't have everyone hate me.

My uncle told me that after the ceremony I will live with someone, I don't know who but I bet she is very important to my uncle. Am saying it's a "she" because considering how overprotective my uncle is, he wouldn't let me live with a man, for obvious reasons, but am hoping I don't fall head over the hills in love with this "her" person. After the dust settles I will tell my uncle about who I really am and am hoping he won't judge me like my mother does.

When I finished washing the blankets I was really tired and wanted nothing but my bed. It was around 16:00 when I finished. The blankets will have to spend the night outside.

My mother was drinking tea with scones with our neighbor MaNkosi, I wonder if she has cooked yet.... I greeted them...

Me: "Mama sengicedile". (Mom I am done)

Mah: "Wasebenza ntombi, usungabeka amabhodo keh. Namhlanje sopheka inyama yenkomo nophuthu". (You've

worked my child, you can start on the pots. Today we will cook beef curry and pap)

Me: "But mom am tired, I've just finished washing blankets and now I have to cook"

Mah: "Manje kuzopheka bani?" (Who will cook then?)

I kept quiet. MaNkosi looked at me then looked at my mother.

MaNkosi: "Aphelele sisi hambo phumula ngizokuphekela mina" (Aphelele you can go and rest I will cook for you)

I heart my mother huffing, I know once MaNkosi leaves I won't hear the end of it. She gave me a death stare but I don't care shame, she can miss me. I am really tired...

Me: "Ngiyabonga Mah". (Thank you Mah)

MaNkosi: "Kulungile sisi". (It's okay)

Mah: "Ekaze uyoshadwa ubani". (I wonder who's going to marry you)

She clapped her hands once. I ignored her and went to my room to rest....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

He walked in while I was watching T.V

Today he was really early I wasn't expecting him. I wonder what happened. He came and picked my lips. He sat next to me and

held my hands. I lowered the volume cause I know he wants us to talk.

Menziwa: "Babe"

Me: "Yes?"

Menziwa: "As I've told you before that I have a wife and three kids"

I looked at him waiting for him to continue.

Menziwa: "I've just found out that my deceased brother had a child, so next week we are going to introduce her to the Zulu ancestors"

Me: "What's that got to do with me?"

He gave me a death stare he really hates it when I disrespect him.

Me: "Am sorry"

Menziwa: "You are going to be my wife soon, you should learn to respect me"

Me: "I know, am sorry. It won't happen again"

Menziwa: "The whole family will be there and MaShezi wants to see you before we get married".

MaShezi is the first wife. I was really surprised. I didn't expect it to be this soon. Menziwa really wants us to get married. I



haven't even started phase one of my plan since I can't get hold of Pearl via phone call, her phone is off. I looked at Menziwa, this old man really loves me and it's going to be hard breaking up with him if the family gets involved. What a mess!

Menziwa: "I know it's too soon but trust me babe it's for the best"

Me: "We could go and meet your family".

He kissed me passionately.

Menziwa: "Ngiyabonga MaMokoena, future Mrs Zulu". (Thank you)

Me: "I hope we will get along with the wife and kids"

Menziwa: "Don't worry about that my love. If they fail to respect and accept you, I will keep you away from them"

Me: "Thank you Mageba"

He kissed the crown of my head. Argh what did I just do!!

PEARL

I was still with MaZwane, she has been a real good company...

MaZwane: "Baby we need to talk about something very important"

Me: "Okay, let me get us snacks"

I walked to the kitchen and got us snacks. Just then Bakkie walked in, he came and kissed my cheek. I took the snacks and he followed me to the lounge. He was surprised to see his mother there.

Bakkie: "Mom, you didn't tell me you're coming"

MaZwane: "You are ignoring me njena Bandiswa"

Bakkie: "Am sorry"

MaZwane: "It's okay, I came to see Pearl anyway"

Bakkie: "Mom we've talked about this"

MaZwane: "I know but she has to know. You're taking your own sweet time"

Bakkie: "Not now please"

MaZwane: "When then?"

Bakkie: "Let's give her time please"

MaZwane: "No! I don't want to die without telling her the truth"

I was really confused. What is exactly going on here?

Me: "Babe what's happening?"

MaZwane: "Wait what!? Babe?"

Bakkie: "Mom I can explain please"

MaZwane looked hurt, confused but mostly angry.

MaZwane: "Explain what! Huh?! How do you explain sleeping with your cousin? When I told you very well ukuthi Pearl us my daughter?! Why?! You are evil just like your mother!"

Bakkie: "Ngiyaxolisa mama inkinga ngiyamthanda". (Am sorry mother it's just that I love her)

I was confused. Cousin? Daughter? Which means that my mother is MaZwane and Bakkie is my cousin. Oh my word! How could I have missed this? The connection? I feel in love and even slept with my cousin and Bakkie knew all along! My breathing changed... I felt like the whole room was spinning and everything went blank ...

To be continued

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Jason wanted us to spend more time together so he booked a night for us at a hotel. I booked the whole thing since he was busy. He requested us to have a private dining area for obvious reasons.

Three days after I started working Jason told me that he is bisexual. Yes I was surprised just like you. I am straight but he threatened to ruin me if I didn't agree. I had no choice since he knows people who know people.

The first time we got intimate was real difficult but not completely since I have been molested before. It brought back a lot of unpleasant and bitter memories for me. Along the way he told me that he has fallen in love with me. I forced myself to say that am in love too.

To be honest all of this is taking what is left of my sanity but how do I tell a dangerous person like Jason that? Since I have nothing he will ruin me till am not able to recognize myself anymore. My dignity will never be restored.

I need to get back to medication if am willing to stay sane. After Menzi Zulu molested me I was depressed so I had to take medication.

People often look at us as men as the strongest but we deal with things that are beyond us. I may appear strong but underneath all of that am scarred, sensitive and broken. It's hard dealing with things all alone, where you have no one to turn to.

I went to the bathroom so that I could call my mother to tell her that I won't be coming back tonight... It rang for a while until she picked up.

Mah: "Tebogo"

Me: "MaNgcobo I want to let you know that am spending the night out"

Mah: "Ohw, where are you going?"

I cleared my throat

Mah: "I understand"

Me: "I'll see you guys tomorrow"

Mah: "Okay bye I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

Today they came in and took Jabu's dead body but I don't know where.

Nothing much is in these rooms, just the mattress and a full length mirror on the wall then the joined bathroom which consists of a bathtub, toilet and a sink.

The guards raped me the whole night, I was bleeding throughout but that didn't make them stop. They even raped me through my other hole, I couldn't take it. There was even my own human waste on the floor. They left scratches on my body. They damaged me physically, emotionally and mentally. The amount of pain I was feeling down there really made it hard for me to even stand up. Tears streamed down. Every part of my body seemed to hurt right now, I was numb.

I heard the door unlocked and I didn't bother looking who was coming in. My clothes were torn so I was naked didn't bother covering up. There's nothing to hide honestly.

Another guard walked in not the one from the two who were raping me. He came and crouched in front of me. He helped me stand up and took me to the bathroom. He was really gentle. He filled the bathtub with water and got me in. The water was warm and it was stinging a bit on my bruises. He had a sponge, bathing salts and a foam bath which smelled like flowers. He looked at me with pity eyes...

Guard: "Will you be able to bath?"

I nodded. He looked at me and walked out, closing the door behind him. I couldn't help it, I just broke down. The guard quickly came back in. He started bathing me, I didn't stop him. I just let him be...

Guard: "It's okay, I won't hurt you"

Somehow those words made me believe him but my wounded self couldn't let me but I didn't have the energy to stop him since I couldn't bath myself. When he was done he took a towel and wrapped me with it. The room where there was human waste and urine was cleaned up. I felt really ashamed that I had a man cleaning up after me. I wasn't expecting this... I looked at him...

Me: "Thank you"

Guard: "You're welcome"

BAKKIE (BAYANDISWA)

When Pearl fainted we took her to the hospital. It has been three hours and nobody has come to us. I was asked to fill in her information on her form and I did.

We were sitting silently on the benches. MaZwane was sitting next to me, I could see that she was still angry at me which is understandable.

It was really awkward not talking to her but I understand her frustrations. I was even scared to ask her anything...

Me: "Mama ngiyaxolisa". (Mom am sorry)

MaZwane: "Sorry won't fix anything. If you took me as your mother you wouldn't have done what you did"

Me: "I know but it wasn't my intention falling in love with her"

MaZwane: "How do you do it Bayandiswa? Huh? How do you sleep with your own blood? If I didn't knew better I would say you are evil just like your mother!"

Me: "Mama angifani no KaMangethe". (Mom am not like KaMangethe)

MaZwane: "Save it! The day you decided to sleep with your own cousin was the day you decided to be like your mother!"

Her anger was visible now so I decided to keep quite. The doctor walked out of the ward and came to us, we both quickly stood up..

Doctor: "Pearl Edward?"

Me: "That's us"

Doctor: "Well Pearl was too stressed which led to fainting but she is awake now and also that alone didn't make her faint"

Me: "Meaning?"



Doctor: "After running some tests we found out that she is two weeks and a few days pregnant, congratulations"

MaZwane: "Wait What?!"

Doctor: "The first semester is very critical and anything can happen to her including miscarriage so please don't stress her it's not good for the baby, excuse me"

The doctor left and I sat down on the benches dumbfounded. I can't believe this!!

To be continued...

A WEEK LATER

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Today it was Thursday. We arrived yesterday at the Zulu residence. I had to look the part you know wear a doek and a traditional long dress, I had to dress respectfully since am going to be a wife soon.

I haven't seen the "niece" that made my life complicated. If it wasn't for her I wouldn't be here in the first place. Yesterday I was introduced to everyone including the wife, and of course she doesn't like me yeah why not. Am just glad that everyone else is welcoming including the kids. That was my biggest fear imagine being hated by your boyfriend's kids including their mother? Never! I wasn't going to survive.

People have started arriving indicating that something is going to happen even neighbors have come to help, but it's too early though. Am even thinking that some just came for food and gossip, you know how people are.

The first wife was said to not be feeling well so I was helping out. I was in the kitchen with the Aunt of the family, she is really nice. She didn't give me a difficult time. She showed me everything that I needed to know.

The house is modern, I guess the wife made changes but I won't lie she has a really nice taste.

We were making scones and tea for the else. She pointed a 20 litre bucket that was on top of the counter.

Aunt: "Grab a plate and put in 10 scones"

Me: "Okay"

Aunt: "Except for your mosqyi body you would make a really humble and beautiful bride"

We laughed as I took the scones.

Me: "Thank you"

Aunt: "You're much better than the dragon lady"

We laughed again.

Me: "Let me take this to the lounge".

PEARL

I looked at myself in the mirror. I was naked. My tummy wasn't visible yet and I didn't wish it to be visible. I can't believe that I'll be a mother soon. That wasn't part of the plan. My baby was I supposed to be a result of an incest. It's even bitter to say that I slept with my cousin. What will I tell him/her?

I rubbed my tummy.

Me: "Am sorry baby, am really sorry Nana"

When I learned that am pregnant with Bakkie's child I was shattered. Of all the things he could do in the world he had to hide my mom away from me just for his own selfish reasons! What kind of a sick bastard is Bayandiswa! Tears streamed down. What about the heaven in Earth that he promised me? What about my heart and the love that I have? What about me? Maybe I don't deserve love after all. First it was Aphelele now Bakkie? I had to be a part of an incest!

I got discharged the next day after being admitted. The doctor said I should take it easy but how?

I went back to Bakkie's house well I didn't have a choice I've got nowhere to go. MaZwane... No.. it's mom, yes mom moved in with us. She wanted to spend more time with me.

Nobody has said anything about the baby. Am now 3 weeks pregnant.

Bakkie walks in, I quickly take a towel and cover up my naked body.

He chuckled a little while shaking his head. He looked at me.

Bakkie: "That's useless since I know you naked"

I kept quiet.

Bakkie: "How are you guys doing?"

Me: "We're fine"

Bakkie: "What do you plan on doing with the baby?"

Me: "I haven't decided yet"

Bakkie: "I have made the decision for you"

Me: "What!?"

Bakkie: "You won't abort my baby Pearl uyangizwa?" (Do you hear me?)

Me: "But...."

Bakkie: "Ungangijwayeli kabi mina uzofa nayo uke uyibulale nje" (Don't get used to me. You'll die with that baby if you kill it).

APHELELE (PHEH)

o you know the feeling of belonging you get when you feel the sense of belonging that you've always wanted? I don't think am making any sense but it doesn't matter. What am feeling cannot be described honestly. I was happy to be at home, KwaMageba. Before we got in they recited our clan names then we were welcomed inside.

Wearing a skirt was so uncomfortable since am not used to wearing one but I had to take it as it is.

Everywhere I turned to I felt love not toxic I got from my mother and Tebogo. Speaking about those two they were also here, apparently uncle Menziwa wanted them here as well.

The house was big and beautiful, really beautiful. It had other small houses maybe they consist of three or four rooms each. The yard was big, you would think it's a royal house but it's not. The neighborhood was really nice, where only people who are "rich" live. The trip was long though took about two hours. Menziwa hired a car for us to bring us here otherwise we would have been lost. My mother didn't like this at all, it was quite visible. Same thing applied to Tebogo but I couldn't care less.

Uncle Menziwa's first born is 18 years old. Her name is Lily. She's really bubbly and we get along really well. We are sharing one of the small houses which are outside the bug house. I was unpacking my clothes. She was jumping on the bed. She stopped and looked at me...

Lily: "Butch or femme?"

Me: "Huh?"

Lily: "I know a lesbian when I see one"

Me: "Am I that visible?"

Lily: "You kept pulling down your skirt after every five minutes"

Me: "Oh wow"

Lily: "You could make a good Butch though"

Me: "I am a Butch!"

We both laughed

To be continued...

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

31

ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

Me: "Why do you care about me so much?"

Blaze: "I care because am also human, I don't know what would I do if someone had to do this to my daughter"

Me: "You have a daughter?"

Blaze: "Yes I do, she's turning 6 years next month"

Me: "Wow I didn't know that"

Blaze: "Only close people do"

(Silence)

Me: "So who is our boss?"

Blaze: "It's Jason, Jason Law, my big brother"

This was shocking. My body trembled as tears were building up.

Me: "I can't believe I thought you were genuine".

My voice was breaking.

Blaze: "I am genuine!"

Me: "Then explain to me why! Why?! How do you allow such cruelty to happen. Am broken beyond repair, can't you see that? All in the hands of your family!"



Blaze: "Do you think I like what is happening? Of course I don't! A lot is at stake now but I don't think you understand that! I came here in exchange for my daughter to live. If I didn't agree, she was going to be killed by my brother. We live in a cruel world! I don't think it has dawned to you but this is how y'all are going to live for the rest of your lives! Jason is cold hearted! Doesn't care about anyone but himself! In a blink of an eye you are going to be shipped to Mexico where you'll become sex slaves! Ever heard of human trafficking? Well you are going to be a victim. We're just waiting for the cops to be on our payroll after that all your wishes and dreams will be gone forever! It's funny how you black people don't take human trafficking seriously but it's a reality. I was going to save you cause I care about you but guess what? Am not genuine.. you said so yourself. Your life depended on me! It's not all of us with bad intentions. You had a chance but you blew it I'll give it to someone who deserves it! Enjoy your new life in Mexico!"

He walked out and locked the door. Blaze is the guard from the other day. We clicked very well. I had to ruin my chance out of here! This past week he has showed nothing but genuine intentions.. I don't know what got over me. If only I could turn back the hands of time... I really messed up. I rocked myself back and forth while tears streamed down. I don't have a reason to live....

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

I have arrived KwaSathane and I want to leave already. As I've said before that my mother inlaw hates me because apparently I had something to do with her son's disappearance not that I deny but she doesn't know that doesn't she? If she knew then I would have understood but she doesn't know so that doesn't give her the right to accuse me! Mxm that old hag!

I heard Menziwa is taking another wife. I don't know but that left a bitter taste on my mouth. According to traditions aren't I supposed to be married to Menziwa's by now? Don't get me started with MaShezi, she's no match to me. I am much better than her in many things. She's not that much of a problem to me.

I heard she's not feeling well so I went to "check" up on her. I knocked and heard a soft "come in". She has her own small house outside. She was sitting in the lounge on the couch with a throw covering her lower part of her body. She was watching TV. Am starting to think she is just avoiding seeing her sister wife.

She gave me a faint smile.

Me: "How are you feeling?"

MaShezi: "Still feeling much dizzy but I'll be fine"

Me: "Hope you'll be better soon and come back to the kitchen to help"

MaShezi: "Maybe I'll be better tomorrow"

Me: "I heard you have a sister wife"

MaShezi: (chuckles) "So I've heard"

Me: "How do you feel about this whole thing?"

MaShezi: "Even if I felt anything it doesn't matter anymore uBaba usesithathile isinqumo". (uBaba has taken the decision)

Me: "Your feelings matter, you both exchanged vows and he broke them"

She just broke down. Ncoah poor thing. Imagine the heart attack she will get once she learns that she will have two sister wives. Just in time. Maybe on the second wife's wedding it will be my wedding also. I comforted her.

Me: "Kuzolunga sisi bekezela" (it will be okay, be patient)

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I was now sitting in a chair, I was really tired. Aunt was starting with the pots for supper.

I haven't seen Menziwa all day, he hasn't called not texted me all day. For someone who is usually clingy this was raising red flags. I excused myself and went outside away from the noise

so that I could call him. I was standing next to one of the houses outside, am not sure who it belongs to.

He answered on the second ring..

Menziwa: "Sthandwa Sami"

Me: "Today am not feeling any love?"

Menziwa: "Am sorry MaMokoena I had a busy day"

Me: "It's okay I understand"

Menziwa: "I will sleep at your house today"

My heart skipped a beat.

Me: "How about uMamkhulu I heard she's not feeling well?"

Menziwa: "Am at the pharmacy actually. Since the pills will make her drowsy she will be out and you know I have an appetite"

I bit my lower lip.

Me: "I'll see you later"

Menziwa: "Okay I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

I hung up. I heard footsteps behind me. I quickly turned to find a woman in her mid forties standing there. She looked like Aphelele though.

Her: "You must be the sister wife"

I faked a smile. This is my first time seeing her.

Me: "I haven't seen you before"

Her: "Where are my manners I am Makhosazane but everyone calls me MaNgcobo but Menziwa calls me MaFuze".

I was confused by her last statement. Who is she? How is she related to the Zulus?

Me: "Mathapelo Mokoena but Menziwa calls me MaMokoena"

Makhosazane: "Nice to meet you"

After that she left. I was confused. I will ask Menziwa about her when he comes back. I don't think am going to like her.

To be continued....

## APHELELE (PHEH)

After eating dinner I decided to spend some time with my grandmother.

It was a bit cold so we were at her room. A heater was plugged in so it was much warmer. We were under the blankets on her bed, my head resting on her chest... Listening to her heart beat.

My grandmother is old but she is still very much strong, I felt safe in her loving arms. We were talking about my life, she wants to know me better.

I have told her everything that has happened. She ran her hands on my hair.

Mam'Zulu: "Your mother is a very difficult person you have to stop trying to impress her because what you do is never good enough for her. Any parent should be happy considering that you finished school without getting pregnant. I didn't want to be the one to tell you but if you are not careful enough your mother is going to be your downfall. Baby anything you do is never enough for her and she always compares you to Tebogo. Favouritism ruins a lot of families, all kids must be treated the same way. Secondly I know you are a lesbian, I was how you were uncomfortable with wearing a skirt. I could tell that your mother doesn't approve that but Phelele you should live your

truth always my baby, you shouldn't pretend to be something that you're not.. you shouldn't live in the closet just because you're afraid of what people would say. Live your truth. Self love isn't selfish"

I just couldn't help myself but shed a few tears. I've never had someone tell me that.

To be honest it's draining to live with my mother. She gave birth to me, she should be supporting me. I can't fight the world and also fight her too.

Mam'Zulu: "It's time to stop crying now and stand up for yourself and your future!"

Her words cut deep. I need someone like her in my life.

Me: "Ngiyabonga Gogo". (Thank you Grandma).

I wiped my tears.

Mam'Zulu: "You have us as your family now. We will always support you unguKaMageba wena. Even though you're a boy now".

We both laughed. It feels good to be home and to be loved....

**BAKKIE (BAYANDISWA)**

The pregnancy wasn't supposed to happen, but you know am glad it did because I would have lost Pearl forever.

MaZwane doesn't want to leave, if she could leave maybe I'll be able to convince Pearl to give us a second chance despite the fact that we're family. We're just cousins right? No harm done. All I have to do now is to make sure that she doesn't abort my baby.

A whole Bayandiswa is going to be a father! Wow now that's what I call miracles. Pearl is weak

very weak but with MaZwane on my way she will have someone to depend on and I don't want that!

You see women depend on me for emotional and financial support. A man is afraid of an independent woman. Sometimes we use that to our advantage.

In life never ever depend on a man for anything, never seem to be desperate, naive and mostly don't show weakness.

I like my women feisty, someone who challenges me but I've fallen in love with a naive and a dependent woman that I can manipulate easily. I didn't want MaZwane to tell her yet cause she will have someone to have her back when all comes crashing down on her. It's even worse now that her mother has her back. She will make her see reason to why can't we date and I can't have that. MaZwane will even influence her to abort my heir, robbing me a chance to be a father that I never had...



I even have a name for my son, it's going to be Mcebisi. If it's a girl me and my woman will find a name which will be suitable for her. We will be one happy family.

I have decided to stop with my business for a while until umama kaMcebisi finishes her first semester. I want to be with her during this critical time of her life.

I was out of the house to get fresh air, the tension at home is really draining. MaZwane is still sulking but I don't have time to nurse her feelings. Until the coast is clear I will be sleeping in the guest room.

I need to think of a way to get MaZwane out of our lives for good. Am thinking of driving her crazy but that's too extreme don't you think?

I think it's time I involve my mother. Since she is a witch doctor she will come in handy...

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I hate it here! Can we just leave already? I hate the fact that Menziwa is that bastard's twin. He's like his duplicate! I just hope I will be able to make it throughout the two worst days of my life.

I asked for days off at work and Jason agreed. I just wish he didn't because I'd rather have him eating my chocolate box rather than coming face to face with the family that costed me

my happiness. Robbed me a chance to be a normal kid. How am I suppose to forgive that? I shall never.

Jason has been keeping me on my toes so much that I have forgotten about my revenge on Aphelele, but she has something distracting her so she won't be annoying me with trying to be successful.

I was given a one roomed house which wasn't pleasant. It wasn't my style. Everything looked old and worn out. I just couldn't sleep here, I can't be earning 8k and having a boyfriend allowance of 15k to come and sleep in a dump like this! This is now how my life goes!

I thought of calling Jason but maybe he is with Bella so I can't risk her finding out about the affair.

My phone rang... "4ever♥☐" was on display...

Don't look at me like that I don't like what's happening I just like the benefits and the money.. definitely not him...

I answered and kept quiet

Voice: "Hello"

It was a female voice so I figured it might be Bella so I just kept my peace.

Bella: "Listen here you bitch! I know you're sleeping with my husband! Pray that I don't find you because if I do I will rain terror on you. I will wipe the streets of Jo'burg with that fake make up of yours! Mxm! Am the wife here! And nobody I mean nobody messes up with me! I've been to prison! I will stab you slut!"

After that she hung up. I can't believe she thinks am a woman. Oh wow! That woman can talk! Am in awe!

After the call I booked 3 days in s nearby hotel, I was serious about not sleeping in this dump!

To be continued...

## PEARL

I don't know what would I do if MaZwane wasn't here with me.

To be honest I don't know what to do with this baby. I mean the baby is innocent but I will always have something tying me to Bakkie for the rest of my life and I can't have that!

I am so disgusted by what he did.

Sleeping is really hard for me these days, I don't get any sleep. Everything seems like a burden. My mind isn't coping at all.

I have switched off the lights and went under the blankets. I have been stressing too much I don't think the baby will survive but who cares? It will just complicate my life even more.

My back was facing the door. A soft knock then he walked in. I know it's him because I could smell his scent. I hear the footsteps coming towards the bed and my body tenses up.

I feel butterflies on my stomach indicating that we were once lovers but now I don't want anything to do with him but my heart tells me otherwise. I feel him behind my back, he has gotten into bed with me. His cold hands find a way into brushing my tummy. I can smell the cognac on his breath. I swallow a lump that is stuck on my throat..

Me: "Why would you do that to me?"

Bakkie: "Am sorry"

Me: "Why?! Just tell me why??"

Bakkie: "I love you"

Me: "This is not a way love is supposed to be"

Bakkie: "I know babe but...."

Me: "This is not love it's obsession. If you were in love you wouldn't do anything that could hurt my feelings intentionally, you wouldn't keep me away from my mother for the sake of your fucked up feelings! You are a psycho! No one in a sane state does what you do!! You cannot differentiate between being in love and being obsessed! Until you could find the difference between the two don't come anywhere near me! Just leave me alone!!"

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Menziwa arrived really late I was now no longer in the mood for him. He arrived at 22:56. His food was on top of the chest of drawers. I dished up for him since he wasn't there when we were watching dinner.

I heard him walk in, I was laying on the bed with my red lingerie. I went all out for him but he decided to disappoint me and come back late when am no longer in the mood.

The whole Makhosazane thing made me realize that I can easily lose Menziwa if am too slow and I can't let that happen. Not now not ever!

I felt him laying behind me. His amazing scent filled my nostrils, I got wet instantly. His voice was a bit husky....

Menziwa: "Mi Amor"

Me: "Babe"

Menziwa: "Face me"

I turned around and faced him. He had taken off all his clothes and was left in his boxers. I swallowed to this beautiful thing in front of me. He may be a bit older than me but he still has it.

Me: "I dished up for you"

Menziwa: "Thank you my love but I've already ate where I come from"

I nodded.

Me: "I met an interesting somebody today"

Menziwa: "Who?"

I sat up straight...

Me: "Makhosazane Ngcobo"

Menziwa: "And?"

I looked at him dumfounded. I stuttered...

Me: "I.... Umh... How is she related to the Zulu's?"

He chuckled...

Menziwa: "You know I once thought that you don't love me but now it's clear to see that you're jealous of me meaning you love me. MaNgcobo is my niece's mother, hence why she isn't a Zulu I see you've met her and somehow she made you jealous. Don't worry about her, she has a crush on me, I mean who wouldn't? Am such a yummy looking thing"

I felt at ease hearing that but how since am convinced that I don't love him?

Menziwa: "Can you kiss me now?"

I got on top of him and we kissed passionately...

ZIMKITA (PEARL'S COUSIN)

'Pain don't hurt the same, I know'

'The lane I travel feels alone'

'But am moving till my legs give out'

'And I see my tears melt in the snow'

'But I don't wanna cry, I don't wanna cry anymore'

'I wanna feel alive, I don't even wanna die anymore'

'Oh, I don't wanna'

'I don't wanna'

'I don't even wanna die anymore'

These words kept ringing on my ears... These lyrics. I had hopes that someday I would get out of here but chances are slim now... I don't have anyone to help me. I've always been dependent on someone but now am alone.

I've been sitting here for hours looking at this black sparkling dress with a slit sitting on my mattress. I don't think I wanna do this anymore. I can't live like this forever.

I look at the cosmetic bag that has all the necessary things one could need if going to be a prostitute for the night. To lure men to want to take you home and tear that ass up.... I look at the black heels that match the dress.

Compared to how my life is I prefer the one I lived back then.. with nothing but always fighting with Mathapelo. Somehow it may seem stupid but I miss arguing with her. I wonder where she is right now...

I also miss Petal... With all her stupidity... I miss JR... My brother to him I was always the big sister that he needed. He didn't make me feel left out. No matter the argument between us. I will miss him.



I miss Pearl.. Besides our last fight I appreciate the things that she has done for me in life. Without her I would be still staying at the orphanage or worse in the streets but I had a shelter above me and that's what am grateful for. Things turned out bad for us along the way but I hope someday we'll be close once again. I hope she's happy wherever she is...

I look at the letters on my hand. Each has a name for who it belongs to. I shouldn't be doing this but everyone deserves to know why things happened the way they will happen.

To be honest I can't continue living like this and today is the day I end all of this and get out from this misery. There's always a limit to how much a person could take and this is my limit.

Jason won't see me to entertain his stupid clients he can kiss me goodbye. I head to the bathroom where the bathtub is filled up with water. I get in..

Before drowning myself I imagine all the good things that has ever happened in my life and smile a little. At least I've lived but this is where it all comes to an end. I've finished my part of the story. It's time others do their part. There's no story goes on forever. It all comes to an end. This is where my journey ends...

Me: "Goodbye World"

I put my head under the water....

To be continued...

34

BAKKIE

Since we're not on good terms with my mother I have been spending time out during the day.

Today am headed to see Jason. I don't know what does he want since I've given him what he wanted, the girls.

We were meeting up at a restaurant. It was fancy but who am I kidding? Jason likes top things. Am just wondering what does he want next cause as far as I am concerned I don't owe him anything.

I find him already on the table drinking whiskey. I see his bodyguards not far from where he is seated. With a person like him.. having bodyguards is a must.

I sit across him and we both stand up for a hand shake then we both sit down...

Me: "Mr Law"

Jason: "Bakkie"

Me: "I am actually surprised that you asked to see me"

Jason: "Yes you know I don't request a meeting unless it's important"

Me: "Am guessing it's important then"

Jason: "I'll just get to the point, the girls you got me are dying"

Me: "Excuse me what?"

That was unusual.

Jason: "It hasn't been a month but I have two girls dead already!Your girls are weak!!"

Me: "If you treat them like trash they won't survive that's quite obvious"

Jason: "You are getting on my nerves right now!"

He banged the table with his hands. Everyone turned their heads and looked at us... The waitress came to us

Waitress: "Gentleman is everything okay here?"

Me: "Yes everything is fine actually"

I faked a smile. He left us..

Jason called over his guard which brought a brown envelope and gave it to me.

Jason: "Here are your girls.. I'll expect you to come and fetch them by tomorrow"

With that said he left with his bodyguards following him behind.

I opened the envelope and was met by disturbing photos of two girls. Their names was written on the back of each photo. It was "Jabu" and "Zimkita"...

My heart shattered when I actually recognized the girl Zimkita... It's Pearl's cousin. Pearl would be shattered to find that her beloved cousin has died.

It will be hard telling her even worse that she is now pregnant.

But maybe just maybe it will be a good time for me to get close to her since I will be "comforting" her for her loss. I will now have a good reason to get close to her....

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

Tomorrow it will be the ceremony so we were preparing for it. More people are pouring in, it's quite busy.

The only thing that makes me happy is that I get to be busy and Mam'Zulu can see that I am the perfect makoti. Not this twig of a Mathapelo. Speaking of which we are with her in the kitchen and they all love her which makes my heart have a stomach ache. I just despise her!!

Aphelele is somewhere around the house greeting people and being introduced. Am worried about Tebogo though. He didn't like coming down her but we didn't have a choice now didn't we? I'll go check up on him later on..

Aunt Nomsiza seems to be the one who adores Mathapelo the most. They are both chatting like they've known each other for the longest of time. The kitchen is filled in with a lot of other women but my focus is on Mathapelo and Nomsiza. They seem to be having a nice conversation going on since they seem to be laughing their lungs out.

I go to the sink and wash dishes so that I could get close to them so I can hear what makes them laugh so much...

Nomsiza: "You can scream girl! You guys should keep it down. I almost got deaf by your sex sound"

Mathapelo: "We're sorry but when the pleasure is too much you can't stop your screams"

They both laughed..

Nomsiza: "Ayy girl my brother is in good hands with you. He was groaning like an angry bull"

Me: "It's not appropriate ukukhuluma ngo Zulu kanjalo" (to talk about Zulu like that)

Nomsiza: "And then? Who invited you into this conversation?"

I cleared my throat. MaShezi walked in. I raised my voice a little.

Me: "We all know that Mathapelo and Menziwa have sexual intercourse but I find it highly inappropriate to talk about this, you're his sister for crying out loud"

All women turned their heads and looked at our direction. MaShezi looked at Nomsiza who looked at me in disbelief.

MaShezi: "Woba namahloni maan Nomsiza!" (Have shame maan Nomsiza)

I winked at Nomsiza and walked towards the door.

Me: "I am going to check up on Tebogo I'll be back ladies"

APHELELE (PHEH)

I don't know if am blind or what but I thought I saw Mathapelo somewhere in the yard. If she is really here what is she doing here kwaZulu. Maybe I was hallucinating, it can't be! Since the ceremony will be tomorrow uncle Menziwa didn't go to work today. He was in the kraal with other men. I don't know what they were doing cause they said they will slaughter the cow tomorrow then it will be eaten on Sunday.

I haven't seen Tebogo I wonder where he could be.. but a cheese boy like him I wouldn't be surprised if he has locked himself at the flat. Am not interested to see him anyway. He's the least favorite person I want to see right now.

Another woman approaches me and it's like I recognize her from somewhere. I have seen her before. He recognizes me as well cause I see her coming towards me.

Woman: "Ngakulindela keh ntombazane azange usafika" (I waited for you girl you never came)

Me: "Ngathi angisakukhumbuli nje mah" (I don't remember you)

Her: "Ngu MaNkabinde"

I quickly remembered her..

Me: "Oh Mama! Am so happy to see you. I lost your card which had your address as well"

MaNkabinde: "Oh how bad. It's good to see that you're still alive. I thank the Almighty God"

Me: "It's by his grace that am still alive"

MaNkabinde: "Ungu Zulu?"

Me: "Yes, it's my father's side of the family"

MaNkabinde: "Kwakuhle keh ntombazane" (That's good my girl)

Me: "Before you leave we must speak about that matter"

MaNkabinde: "Khululeka mntanami" (Relax my child)

Me: "Thank you mother"

MaNkabinde: "Where's Mam'Zulu?"

Me: "Let me take you to her, follow me"

She followed me to the living room. I am glad that I saw her again. It's very clear that God is on my side once again. I thought that all was lost but now I could see that he's with me once again.

I was starting to lose hope. Everything seemed lost but now I have faith. Thanks to my newly found family. I guess all I needed was to be united with my family...

To be continued...



## MATHAPELO (PELO)

This Makhosazane of a woman really pissed me off! Judging by the way she's been acting around me I could see that she's somehow jealous of me but I don't care less cause right now am the one who rules Menziwa's heart, I don't really care about MaShezi. She doesn't scare me a bit....

After that little drama Aunt Nomsiza kept quiet and we continue chopping vegetables. It was really uncomfortable since MaShezi is here now. She just stood there and watched me. I felt uneasy.

She cleared her throat..

MaShezi: "Asikhulume la ngaphandle mnakwethu" (Let's talk outside sister wife)

I didn't feel good about this. I looked at Aunt Nomsiza.

Aunt: "Hamba sisi" (Go)

She went out and I followed her outside. We went to the side of the side that was more quite. What I liked about this side is that you can see what's happening in the kraal from here, and I could see Menziwa if anything happens.

MaShezi: "I am guessing you know me already"

Me: "Yes I do Mamkhulu"

MaShezi: "Well I know girls like you, I've been thru with this before so I know. I won't call you a gold digger not that you're not a gold digger but your intentions are much more deeper than this"

I swallowed... But I didn't wanna seem weak so I just listened to her with a straight face

Me: "I don't know where Mamkhulu is headed with this conversation"

She laughed and shook her head a bit. She held the towel on her shoulders with both hands and looked at me straight in the eyes.

MaShezi: "It's not that I hate you, nope I don't. But am here because I can see you're still young you have great things ahead of you and this is the worst decision you'll ever make. You're too young to be tying yourself to marriage. This is not the life you'd want to live forever. You'll want to be like your peers but you won't be able to do that because of this old man you are deciding to marry. I know for the fact that you don't love Menziwa and you will regret the day he finds out that you were playing with his feelings all along. He really loves you. Run now before it's too late"

What MaShezi is saying is all true but I can't help but feel like maybe just maybe I've fallen in love with Menziwa, am not sure though.

How did she manage to read thru me? But I won't let her get in the way of me and my plans. I am still going to milk Menziwa all his money and go live happily ever after with Pearl.

I don't want her to think that all that she's saying is indeed true meanwhile it is.

I faked a smile...

Me: "Thanks for that advice but I don't think I'll be using it since I really love Menziwa. I know to others I may appear as a gold digger trust me hunny am not. I truly love him. He picked me up when I was down and out. I'll be with him till death do us apart. I know that you feel challenged but am not here to challenge you am here to help you build the Zulu legacy. Am not your enemy and I will not stand in your way. Respect me and I will respect you as well"

She chuckled. Menziwa came to us with a worried face.

Menziwa: "Mamkhulu"

MaShezi: "Zulu"

Menziwa: "Is everything okay here?"

MaShezi: "All is well I was just having a woman to woman talk with MaMokoena and welcoming her to the family"

Menziwa: "Well am happy to hear that. It would shatter my soul if you guys didn't get along"

Me: "Don't worry Zulu we're just getting to know each other"

Menziwa: "MaMokoena can I please have a glass of water?"

Me: "Let me get it for you"

I walked away after winking at MaShezi. I refuse to play right into her trap. I know that all she said was the truth but I can't run away now while I don't have any money with me and where to cause I don't have any family. I need to go on with the plan. I can't afford to slip up now.. I've come too long.

PEARL

I was sitting on the couches with my mother. We were talking just getting to know each other.

Mah: "I am sorry my child for not being there for you while you needed me"

Me: "You've been apologizing for a while now Mama Bear it's okay I understand where you are coming from and don't worry I am not angry"

Mah: "Thank you baby, how about we go to the kitchen and cook lunch?"

Me: "I don't know how to cook but let's go"

We both went to the kitchen and she took beef out of the refrigerator and placed it on the sink for it to defrost. I took out vegetables so we could chop them in the meantime. She boiled water for the pap.

I sat on the bar stools and she sat across me.

Mah: "You should learn how to cook you'll be someone's wife someday"

I laughed.

Me: "Hao mama. I don't think I'll ever get married mina"

Mah: "You can't tell my baby. We make the plans but God makes the decision it's not up to you. I often say that marriage is a blessing, it's not something that anyone can get but you're lucky if you got it but that also doesn't mean that if the marriage gets too much you can't leave! That's nonsense! You're also human. You deserve peace and if your marriage doesn't give you peace you're allowed to leave that person"

Me: "Wow. I didn't see it like that yazi"

Mah: "What's important my baby is your own happiness. I have to support you in anyway possible as your parent. I know I have

missed out on a lot of things in your life but it's not too late to catch up"

Me: "Mom there's something I need to tell you"

Mah: "Okay?"

Me: "Your other child, the boy. He's okay, he's safe. He's in boarding school, we never lost each other. Our foster parents named him Junior but I call him JR. He will be visiting in two weeks time you'll be able to meet him"

She closed her eyes and tears streamed down. It was really an emotional moment for her.

Mah: "Thank You Lord for finding my kids. I have been praying everyday and now my prayers have been answered oh Bawo!"

I held her hands. The door opened and Bakkie walked in. I rolled my eyes. My mother's back was facing him so she didn't see him. She turned around and saw him. Her face went from being soft to being angry.

She started shouting..

Mah: "Ufunani lana?" (What do you want here?)

Bakkie: "Trust me I don't want to be here either". He looked at me

Bakkie: "Mawakhe I need to talk to you"

Me: "Talk"

He looked at MaZwane.

Me: "What you want to say, you need to tell me in front of her"

He sighed.

Bakkie: "I...umh... It's about Zimkita"

My hear race picked up. Tears formed in my eyes. My voice was breaking.

Me: "W...hat about her?"

Bakkie: "I am sorry but she committed suicide"

Me: "Tell me you're joking"

Bakkie: "I am not. They're both dead together with Jabu"

No! No! No! Zimkita can't die. She can't do that to me! I cried my lungs out. It was like someone was stabbing me with a sharp knife on my heart. My cry was nothing matched to how my heart was feeling.

I never got a chance to fix things with her. I felt warm liquid on my legs. I touched it and my hand came back with blood.

I knew what this meant! I can't have a miscarriage! This can't happen to me!

Mom and Bakkie rushed to me. I couldn't stop screaming.

Me: "Mama please save my baby... Sav...e...my bab..y... My baby...!"

Everything went blank...

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I received a call from my mother... I didn't want to answer her call but I know she won't stop calling so I answered.

Mah: "Where the hell are you?"

Me: "MaFuze how are you?"

Mah: "Don't make me mad! Where are you Tebogo!?"

Me: "I am at a BNB why?"

Mah: "I've been looking everywhere for you and you decide to leave without telling me! I've been worried!"

I sighed...

Me: " I should have called I am sorry MaFuze"

Mah: "It's okay I am just glad that you're safe"

Me: "Don't worry"

Mah: "Please come and help around here, they have been asking for you here"

Me: "I'll come tomorrow Mah. I can't be in that place! I don't fit in"



Mah: "Aybo Tebogo! It's not about fitting in, it's about supporting your sister"

Me: "Oh so you're team Aphelele now"

I heard her sigh.

Mah: "Of course not. Am just doing it because I want the family to see us as supportive people not that I am team Aphelele"

Me: "Argh fine! I'll be there in an hour"

Mah: "Alright baby I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

This is tiring. If it wasn't for "supporting" that brat I wouldn't be here. Someone knocked on the door. I wasn't wearing anything besides my trunk.

I am guessing it's the room service so I shouted come in while covering my self with the duvet.

My jaw was on the floor when I saw Bella walking in crying. Her weave was messed up and she wasn't wearing any make up or shoes. Her appearance was disturbing.

A lot of questions flooded on my mind the first one was how did she find me? I got up and went to her and hugged her.

I rubbed her back while she cried silently. I was really confused.

I led her to the bed and we sat down.

Bella: "I am sorry to come unexpectedly"

Me: "No it's okay"

Bella: "I have no one to talk you and that's why I came to you"

Huh? This was confusing...

Me: "How did you find me?"

Bella: "It doesn't matter"

Me: "Well it does... I deserve to know"

Bella is confusing me right now. I thought she was crazy but now I can see that she's insane. Who in their right mind goes to You know what nevermind! I am defeated!!

She gave me those naughty eyes that she always gives me. Oh no you don't! I sleep with your husband for crying out loud! I can't sleep with you too! That's insane!

Bella: "Can you make love to me?"

See what I mean? She's definitely crazy.

Me: "Huh?!"

I looked at her dumbfounded.

Bella: "Oh come on! I know you want this as well. Jason doesn't have to know. He's cheating anyways"

Me: "Look Bella I can't do..."

She kissed me shutting me from saying anything else. I got to give it to her she's a really good kisser. She continued kissing me while her hands was rubbing my bare chest...

To be continued...

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

## MENZIWA ZULU

Nothing hurts like losing someone close to your heart.. it hurts so bad that my twin brother is no more, I won't lie.

When I found out that he's missing I was shattered. Ever since he married MaNgcobo we didn't see eye to eye and we were fighting a lot so much that I decided to go live in another province.

I know he's dead cause I felt it when his soul left his body. All that's left is finding where his body is. I don't believe the theory of being missing. How can a grown old man get lost? Something doesn't add up...

I've been having suspicions about MaNgcobo and something in me tells me that he knows something about my brother's disappearance and that is without a doubt. When Menzi got missing she didn't look like someone who doesn't know where her husband is well that's according to my mother of course...

I have seen how uncomfortable she gets at the mention of finding my brother..

Since they are all at the Zulu residence I've decided to go snoop around at their house. Maybe I could find something as evidence or something that could tell me what exactly happened.

Right now am driving to where they live. I have the keys which I borrowed from Aphelele \*winks\*.

I unlock the gate and make my way inside. I also unlock the door and get in. Ever since Aphelele came back in this house I could see the difference... It's not longer dirty like before. MaNgcobo doesn't like herself shame.

I make my way to her room and stumble upon a dumb. Wow! How can a person live in this filth?

I search through her wardrobe and find a brown envelope written \*MENZI ZULU\*.. I take it... Maybe I'll find something that will help me. I return everything to it's rightful places well I try to since everything is everywhere. I get out of the house after locking up. I didn't go thru Aphelele's things cause I know she knows nothing she was too young to understand..

I am attempted to go thru Tebogo's things but remember that I don't have the key to his flat. I take the envelope and walk towards his flat, maybe I'll find a way to open the door.

Am squeezed so I went behind the house to take a quick piss and see something really interesting. It's like something is buried here cause the soil isn't the same level. It looks like a grave though because with my eyes I could tell it's a height of a man... I kneel down and hear a voice shouting above me..

Voice: "Good Morning"

I rise up to find a slender woman in her early forties looking at me.

Me: "Morning"

Her: "Ngifuna uMaNgcobo sekunesikhathi ngingamboni" (I am looking for MaNgcobo it's been a while since I last saw her)

I smile at her.

Me: "UkwaZulu mama khona into emdingayo" (She's at the Zulu residence there's something that needs her)

Her: "Oh ayi ngiyezwa sengobona ngaye uma esebuya" (I hear you I'll see her when she comes back)

She turns around and leaves. I also follow her with the envelope in my hands and follow her. She goes out the gate and I get into my car

BAKKIE

Once again I am sitting on this wooden bench because the love of my life is here AGAIN. We've been here since yesterday nobody has attended us and it seems like the time is moving real slowly. I can't get the image of her covered in blood out of my head.

The amount of blood that she lost makes me wonder if my baby will make it or not. I shake that thought off my head. I can't be

thinking like this cause I really want my baby to live. I don't know what I'll be without him.

As per usual MaZwane isn't talking to me. I've been hearing silent "oh NkosiYami" coming from her. I am too cooped up in my thoughts to even entertain her.

MaZwane: "When Pearl gets out of here I am taking her with me, this is too much for one person"

I nod. Not that I agree but because I don't wanna fight her right now. My baby's life is in danger. That's not going to happen not now not ever! Pearl isn't going anywhere. I will let MaZwane think that she has the last laugh but I know am the one who will win come dark or blue.

Even if it means kidnapping the love of my life then it shall be. My heart yearns for her love more than anything. I'll have to die first than have someone take Pearl away from me. She's mine and mine alone!

The doctor comes out of the ward and makes his way to us. He's the same doctor from last time. He sighs and has the look that everyone is afraid of.

I go back and sit down while he talks to MaZwane...

Doctor: "I am sorry but she lost the baby"

I see MaZwane nodding.

Her: "Can we see her?"

Doctor: "She's still resting now you can come back after two hours"

Her: "Alright thank you doctor"

He walks off. MaZwane takes her back and walk away from me. I know she's going to the house. She didn't even show any emotion towards the situation of the lost of my baby.

I've never been one to cry but it hurts... It hurts so bad. I sunk to the floor and cry my lungs out....

APHELELE (PHEH)

Today is Saturday. The day I officially become uZulu. I've been waiting for this day since forever and now it's finally here. We're just waiting for my dad so that we can start the ceremony. I don't know where he went but he said he's on his way.

I am now used to wearing a skirt even though my grandmother still laughs at me when am wearing it. MaNkabinde is going to be leading throughout the whole ceremony then afterwards we will talk about the curse and all of that.

After dressing up I decide to go and join the ladies in the kitchen while waiting for my dad. He's just delaying. I am really nervous.



I almost faint when I see Mathapelo in the kitchen with the other ladies. My jaw is on the floor honestly.

Me: "Good morning everyone"

They all greet back. She raises her head and sees me. I am guessing she's just as surprised as I am. Aunt Nomsiza talks..

Nomsiza: "Aphelele sisi this is your uncle's second wife Mathapelo. Mathapelo this is your husband's niece Aphelele"

I laugh while shaking my head.

Me: "Wait what?!"

Nomsiza: "It is what it is. Treat her with respect please"

I look at MaShezi.

Me: "Malo uvumile vele?" (Mom you agreed?)

She shrugged her shoulders.

Me: "Aunt this is nonsense! There's no way my uncle is getting married to this .... I don't know what but this! You gotta to be joking! This ain't happening"

Mathapelo laughed while shaking her head. She was really enjoying this, big time!

Mathapelo: "Baby girl I know you're not happy but you need to get used to this because I am not going anywhere"

I got frustrated and slapped her. Aunt Nomsiza held me back..

Aunt: "Ayy Maan PHEH!!"

She started crying. I laughed out loud. It felt good slapping the shit out of her. My uncle walked in cause there was noise in the kitchen. Even my grandmother came in the kitchen to watch.

Uncle M: "Aphelele what's your problem?"

Me: "You will marry her over my dead body"

Uncle M: "Go to your room! Now!"

I laughed again and looked at her on my uncle's arms. I pointed her

Me: "Ngizokuphinda wena!" (I will slap you again)

Mam'Zulu: "Phuma Maan!" (Get Out!)

I went out....

To be continued...

37

PEARL

One thing about time it's that it doesn't go back. You can't restore it, once it's lost you'll never get it back.

Being in love really messes one's mind. You only see you and your lover in the world and nobody else.

If I would turn back the hands of time.. I would but it's too late.

I regret the day I met Bakkie! Such a curse of a person!

My heart bleeds for Zimkita... I should've have said what I said that day, that robbed me the chance to enjoy my cousin's last days on Earth... What am I saying?, She wouldn't think about death. I guess she felt like it was too much.

I borrowed the nurse's phone and logged in on Facebook. It was trending. The picture I saw left me breathless. It was such a disturbing scene for it to be shared thru social media, some people are very sensitive. I had a lot of messages and notifications but I didn't bother. I logged out and dialed J.R's number. I don't know the last time we talked I was even afraid of what he's going to say...

He answered on the second ring..

J.R: "Hello?"

Me: "Nana"

Him: "Pearl?"

Me: "Yes Nana it's me"

I heard some sniffing and he broke down, I couldn't help it I cried with him. After some time we both went silence..

Him: "I had to find out from social media that Zimkita is no more, really?"

Me: "I was admitted.. am sorry"

Him: "What happened that caused her to commit suicide?"

Me: "I.... Umhh am not quite sure"

Him: "Ayibo Pearl how when you both live together?"

Me: "It's complicated bhuti wami"

Him: "Pearl maan!! Zimkita committed suicide for crying out loud and you talk about being complicated!!? So meaning that you guys don't live together anymore?! Entlek what's happening?"

Never ever has Junior raised his voice when talking to me.. This is the first time

Me: "I... Ummh Bhuti"

Him: "Ayy Maan! What's that got you so caught up that you ended up forgetting your family?! Me?! You don't care wena Pearl!! You're selfish!! Am just wondering how are you my sister? I don't think we come from the same womb! You're a disgrace!"

Those words hurt more than losing the baby and Zimkita. My own brother calling me a disgrace... I really messed up..

Him: "I'll come tomorrow so we can start the preparation of Zimkita's burial.. send me your address"

After that he hung up. I don't know how are we going to arrange the funeral cause we don't have a funeral policy. Who in their right mind doesn't have a funeral policy? Yeah Neh...

The nurse walks in with my mother and I am so happy to see her.. I remove my account then delete Junior's number. I hand her back her phone after thanking her for borrowing me. My mother hands her a R20 for her airtime that I have used... She gladly takes it.. Nurses and money!! She leaves us and my mother just gives me a well deserved hug... It feels good to feel motherly love...

I just cry, maybe the pain in my heart will ease a bit... After some time I stop crying with nothing left but hiccups..

MaZwane: "Shhhh Nana it will all be fine don't cry anymore mama is here"

Me: "Kubuhlungu" (It hurts)

I feel like crying again but I stop myself. I've done enough crying for one day

MaZwane: "The doctor said he will discharge you tomorrow, I'll bring your toiletries and a change of clothes. I'll come tomorrow to fetch you and we will head home"

She hugs me again. I feel at ease when I hear "home". I know we won't be going back to Bakkie's house. I will be free from all the torture at last....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

My cheek still burns from the hideous slap I got from Aphelele. She's disrespectful! If I knew better I would say she's jealous that am happy and that person is not her. She's childish maan!! I don't know why would she slap me like that? Only a jealous b\*\*\*h like her would do something like that!

I just cried to attract attention to make everyone be alert of what's happening. Not that it hurts.

After that whole accident Menziwa went back to the house to start the ceremony, after all the show must go on after all the preparations done and the people are now here and we obviously can't cancel because of a lousy slap of a jealous b\*\*\*h!...

I went to my house just to cover up the fingers that she left on my cheek with make up. Just as I was about to leave the house Aphelele walks in...

I sigh..

Me: "Tjhoo ayi!!"

Aphelele: "You know I don't believe this whole act of love from you"

Me: "That's rich coming from you!"

Aphelele: "I know you just money"

Me: "I know and you're not the first nor last one to tell me that and it doesn't move me anymore"

She sighed and sat on the bed.

Aphelele: "Why would you date my uncle though?"

Me: "We find love in a hopeless place, I also didn't know that he's your uncle and you're the devil of a niece. If I knew I wouldn't have came here"

Aphelele: "Oh trust me I wouldn't have it any other way"

Me: "I am glad you feel that way"

Someone called for her outside.

Aphelele: "But you won't get married to my uncle though"

Me: "I wasn't waiting for your approval"

I slapped her. She looked at me in shock.

Me: "That's for slapping me earlier on. You're just too childish maan!"

I was surprised that she didn't slap me back, she just went out to wherever they were calling her to.

I take my phone from the pedestal and text Pearl on Facebook for the hundredth time now. I can see that she was active not so long ago but she didn't reply to any of my message.. I send another

"We need to talk" text. I sigh and walk back outside to see where I can help since the goat will be slaughtered soon..

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

I am over the moon! Ngi happy bahlali! If I knew how to dance I would be dancing right now wearing the shortest skirt I've ever worn.

I feel happy maan! Somebody had to slap Mathapelo for me but I would have liked it more if I slapped her myself! That girl has wings for days! Ayy maan... My daughter takes after me! Like mother like daughter!

If we were at home I would have kissed her or even better give her 10k to go shopping... Yhuuu my baby yenina!



Menziwa said that I must reprimand her, I wanted to tell him to go to hell but then I remembered that he's my future husband and that his word is law so I'll do it even though I would prefer her life that, according to me of course.

My mood went to 100% that I've started preparing the steamed bread. I am in a full makoti mode for everyone else to see that I'm a well deserved bride not that twig.

As I was collecting wood I see the elder uncle of the family having a smoke. I walk to him when he still outside.

Me: "Sawubona malume" (Hello Uncle)

Uncle: "How are you my daughter?"

Me: "I am good and how are you?"

Uncle: "I am good, it's been long since I last saw you, who kicked you out of these yards?"

I laughed a little, but being careful not to look him directly into his eyes.

Me: "I am no longer married to this family so what would bring me here?"

Uncle: "You and Menziwa are divorced?"

Me: "We never got married"

Uncle: "He was supposed to take his brother's place? Makoti are you aware of ukungenwa?"

Me: "Yes I am aware"

Uncle: "Menziwa will be your husband in a month, he's supposed to follow the traditions"

I smiled a little and bowed my head as a form of respect. That's what I wanted. It's like he was reading my mind.

Uncle: "Ayi Kulungile Keh Koti" (It's fine bride)...

He threw the cigarette down and stepped on it then made way into the house.

My plan is finally coming together. I've always loved Menziwa and we will be perfect together. I know that this uncle is hard headed he won't allow that good of a nothing marriage between Mathapelo and Menziwa go on...

I can see myself already driving a car that my husband bought for me. Going on trips with him to different countries... Argh life is going to be nice shame...

I continue picking up the wood while singing a melody that is only known by my heart...

To be continued...

## APHELELE (PHEH)

We were dishing up food for people to eat. The ceremony went well and am happy. Despite the drama that happened in the morning, everything went really well.

I know Mam'Zulu is going to bite my head off because of the slap I gave Mathapelo. She's been throwing daggers at me ever since. Uncle Menziwa is also angry at me but my mother is very much happy, I don't know but it's very unusual for her to be happy cause as far as I know it she hates being here but what can I say....

The reason behind me slapping Mathapelo is that I feel jealous that she has moved on. I know that our relationship barely survived for two minutes but I loved her you know? We needed more time to know each other and she shouldn't have left me when I was swearing at her I mean I am a human I make mistakes she didn't have the right to break up with me!

Of all the people she could have moved on with she just had to choose my uncle! Like really? She had to hurt me like that?

I am going to make sure they don't get married. I don't care if she doesn't want to be with me again but she can't possible marry my uncle!! That's total disrespect and it's wrong in so many ways!!

When she slapped me again I didn't want to fight with her cause I deserved it..

As I am still busy in the kitchen dishing up for myself my grandmother calls me outside. I know it's about time...

Mam'Zulu: "Yini inkinga yakho Thembeke?" (What's your problem Thembeke?)

Me: "Lutho Gogo" (Nothing Grandma)

Mam'Zulu: "Loku okwenzile angikufuni siyezwana uMenziwa uyafana nokuthi ubabakho okusho ukuthi uMathapelo umawakho" ( I don't like what you did are we clear? Menziwa is like a father to you which means Mathapelo is your mother)

Well yeah... So that means that my mother is my ex? This is totally wrong. I wanted to tell her that but it will just cause more conflict so I just nod.

Mam'Zulu: "Awusakwazi ukukhuluma manje?" (You don't know how to talk now?)

Me: "Ngiyakwazi gogo" (I know how to talk grandma)

She clicked her tongue. She is really angry..

Mam'Zulu: "You're a child in this family so behave like one. I don't like rude kids. They make my whole body shiver!"

Me: "I understand I am sorry"

Mam'Zulu: "You should apologize to your mother not me"

Me: "I didn't do anything to MaNgcobo"

Mam'Zulu: "Oh no! I am talking about MaMokoena"

Me: "We're almost the same age for me to call her mom"

Mam'Zulu: "I don't care phela she's your mother kodwa at the end of the day and that's final!"

Me: "I hear you gogo"

Mam'Zulu: "At dawn tomorrow MaNkabinde will go down to the river with you so you can be cleansed since she told me you were cursed"

Me: "Yebo gogo" (yes grandma)

Mam'Zulu: "Hamba uyoqhubeka nokuncedisa ke sisi kodwa angifuni ukuphinde ngizwe ukuthi uxabana no MaMokoena" ( You can go and continue helping but I don't ever want to hear that you're fighting with MaMokoena)

Me: "It will never happen again"

All of this is nonsense! This marriage won't happen! Over my dead body!

On my way to the kitchen I see Mathapelo in brackets mommy dearest on her way to the kitchen as well. As she was holding

the handle of the door I went and stood behind her. I squeezed her ass a little and she quickly turned and faced me.

Me: "Can I pass?"

She cleared her throat..

Mathapelo: "Ummhh.. of course"

She stepped away from the door. I looked at her then kissed her on the cheek. I opened the door and left her like that..

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

As men were busy eating in the kraal I went to the car and drove to MacDonald to get something to eat. The mall wasn't that far...

Bella gave me her car yesterday... It's a Mercedes Benz AMG C63 it's black in color... I really like it

it really suits me..

I know it's wrong but I can't help but think it feels right. I am continuing with having an affair with both of them. I don't really love Jason I just love the benefits, I also don't love Bella I just enjoy the fact that she has a pussy... I don't want to feel gay.. I want someone to remind me once more that I am straight I am not gay.

I see a long line on the drive thru so I decide to park and go inside.

I settle on the chair at the corner where I could see everyone from here. I place my order and while waiting I keep myself busy by playing Candy Crush on my phone.

Voice: "Is this seat taken?"

I look up and see that hot little thing from the Zulu residence. I don't quite remember her name but I remember that she is Menziwa's daughter..

I quickly reply while looking straight into her eyes.

Me: "Oh no! It's not taken you can sit down"

She places her sling bag on top of the table then sits down opposite me.

Her: "So you ran away?"

Me: "That makes the two of us"

She throws her head back and laughs. She has an ugly yet cute laugh.

Her: "Argh! There's so much to do so I decided to run away"

Me: "Tell me about it"

Her: "You know who I am right?"

Me: "Umhh... I think I do"

She has a very nice and slim body... I actually like it. She has a small round ass which very much suits her by the way.. The skirt she is wearing looks good on her..

Her: "Really?"

I move my eyes around and they land on Jason's angry face who just got in... Panic engulfs me. He looks really mad. I quickly hide the car keys.

He makes his way to my table and I know I am screwed.

I look at this gorgeous face starring at me and I excuse myself.

I go to him really quickly before he reaches our table and embarrasses himself.

I don't see his bodyguards anywhere which is unusual.

Me: "Come let's talk outside"

He looks at the girl I was sitting with. He's hesitates to leave but eventually he does and I lead him outside so we could talk...

The only question in my mind is that how did he find me?...

BAKKIE

My eyes hurt from all the crying that I did. It still hurts...



After my mother left I went to Pearl's ward so I could talk to her. I know she's angry at me but we have lost something beautiful so it's the time where we need each other the most..

I am hesitant to walk in her ward but at some point I will have to talk to her.

She has a private ward and it's questionable since it's a public hospital and you know how public hospitals can be.

I walk in and she is looking at the wall like she is in the zone....

I sit on the chair next to the bed and hold her hands.

I hear her sniffing and she starts crying.

I stand up and bring her close to me, she doesn't push me away but instead she holds me tightly and cry. I shed a few tears but quickly wipe them away.

Her: "It hurts Bakkie it really hurts! Where was I when Zimkita needed me the most? When she really needed a shoulder to cry on? I don't deserve to live"

Oh she is crying because Zimkita committed suicide and not because she lost the baby.

Me: "Wow" I chuckle not believing my ears.

Me: "So you're crying because Zimkita took her own life and not because we just lost the baby?"

Her: "That baby was a curse Bakkie! Yes the baby was innocent but he/she was a product of an incest!"

Me: "I know okay! I know! But that's my child we're talking about Pearl! My own blood! I expected you to cry but no you're telling me about a person who had a choice to live but chose to die! Other than your baby!"

Her: "Why would I cry for something that was going to ruin my life? Tie me forever with you? Make my life miserable!? I didn't want someone to constantly remind me of what happened between me and my cousin! That's wrong! What was I going to tell my baby?! Think about it! I am actually happy that I didn't abort or the fault wouldn't have been mine and now you don't have someone to blame!"

Something deep inside of me tore when I heard those words. So Pearl didn't want to have a baby with me? I felt like my chest was closing in on me, like I couldn't breathe...

They say men don't cry but I cried. Those words were the only words I will never forget..

Me: "I love you"

After saying that I left... I couldn't stay any longer. I was too heart broken...

To be continued...

## MENZIWA ZULU

I've never been this confused before ... Yes I've been confused in my life but at the end I figure it out but now I don't know who to ask and who will tell me the truth that I want to hear...

Is Mathapelo bisexual? Is Aphelele lesbian as well?

Well yes I know the LGBTI community but I have never seen anyone face to face.

After seeing Aphelele kiss my woman on the cheek I felt I don't know hurt?

I was on my way to the kitchen so I could talk to Phelele but what I saw messed up my mood. I hate being made a fool! I know that slap Aphelele gave to Mathapelo meant something!

I don't want to conclude that they are exes cause I am not sure as yet... I don't want to think about it cause I know it will make me furious!!

I know I will find out soon because when we go back to our flat on Tuesday Aphelele will go and live with Mathapelo on the flat and I will put CCTV cameras so I can see what's happening.. I don't want to do my own conclusion because it will turn into something else....

I love Mathapelo I really do...but I can see that she doesn't love me as much. I have dated once in high school and the girl I loved broke my heart a million times and I forgave her... It hasn't heal since from then. Just to avoid getting hurt I hurt you first before you hurt me.. I can't deal with another yet broken heart. It will ruin me!!

I know that since being in Mathapelo's presence will make me angry I decided to spend the night ka Mamkhulu.

MaShezi walks in with a basin and she has a towel hanging on her shoulder. I am sitting on the bed so she places the basin down the takes off my shoes together with the socks, then she washes my feet.

What I like about MaShezi is that she is grounded. She's from the rurals you can tell by her washing my feet. She is very down to Earth and humble. She doesn't speak that much and I can safely say that she is my peace. She doesn't challenge me like Mathapelo does... Sex with her is usual but Mathapelo is on fire. She really learnt a lot at "the house"

You know how women are... She has tried once to be the Mathapelo type but a few slaps got her back on track... I know I shouldn't be abusive towards my wife but that's the only thing that will make her not leave me. I wouldn't say I am deeply in love with MaShezi but as I've said she's my peace and she's used to me now so it will be hard to find someone to replace

her. Then there is Mathapelo... I love her but she isn't my peace. She doesn't beg and she isn't dependent on me well at least not yet but in due time she will be what I want her to be...

After she is done she disposes the water and undress so she could take a shower. Unlike Mathapelo Zandile has a really beautiful body. She's size 34... She has a great shape. I don't want her to go stay in the flat with me cause I know she will change the way she dresses and men will start seeing her beautiful body and take her away from me. I don't want anyone else to touch my wife! I'll be damned!

The long dresses that she keeps on wearing makes her look like she's old but she's not. She's 30 years with three kids but her body says otherwise.

My man down there twitches at the sight of this beautiful woman in front of my eyes. What I like about Zandile is that no man knows her naked other than me which means that I am the only man she has ever slept with.

I stand up and go join her in the shower. I've missed being buried inside her. Zandile really loves herself. She doesn't have an awful smell down there like Mathapelo....

I quickly get naked then join her in the shower. Her back is against the door so she doesn't see me when I come in. I bring her close to me so she could feel my reaction..

I whisper on her ears...

Me: "I've missed you"

I turn her around then start kissing her while running my hands on her boobs...

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

On my way to the house that I am using I see the uncle I talked to making his way to me...

Uncle: "My daughter"

Me: "Uncle"

Uncle: "I spoke to the elders and we all agreed that indeed you will get married to Menziwa"

It seems like today I am getting great news only. I smile and look down.

Uncle: "We have concluded that you will get married to Menziwa first then MaMokoena will follow after you"

Me: "I understand really well"

Uncle: "Tomorrow we will have a family meeting discussing that then next month we will have a traditional wedding where you'll be traditionally married to Menziwa"

Me: "Yebo malume" (yes uncle)

Uncle: "Kulungile keh ndodakazi" (it's okay then my daughter)

He proceeds and goes into the house. Well Mathapelo guess who's your new sister wife then... It's me of course!

I make my way in the sit on my bed. I get busy on social media then stumble upon a post on Facebook about a witch doctor that helps with a love potion. There are a lot of testimonies so I know that it's true because not so many people can lie about such unless then you paid them but I doubt...

I save her numbers then call her... She answers almost immediately... She has a deep voice you wouldn't tell that it's a woman.

Me: "Umhh... Hello?"

Her: "Yebo Makhosazane"

Me: "How do you know my name?"

Her: "You seem to forget that I am a witch doctor"

Me: "Okay I Umhh... I need your help"

Her: "Yes I know that"

Me: "KaMangethe I need a love potion"

Her: "Aw kodwa indoda akuyona eyakho mos" (But the man isn't yours mos)

Me: "Are you going to help me or not?"

She laughs out loud, she has an irritating laugh! If I wasn't desperate I would hang up because she's getting on my nerves.

KaMangethe: "Masuphume kuloyomuzi ungithinte sokhuluma into ekhona" (When you're out of that home call me so we could talk something that makes sense)

After saying that she hangs up. I don't believe on witch doctors but this one seems to know what's she is doing. When we leave on Tuesday I will call her so we can discuss a way forward..

I didn't want to do this but I know Menziwa doesn't love me so he will just disagree with this whole thing and make my life more hard then it really is and I can't have that honestly. I really need him. Not only for financial support but I really love him and I know our thing will work out...

This love portion will really help me out.....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

That wasn't supposed to happen! I don't love Aphelele! Not after she said all those mean things to me when we were still dating! Not when she said I have an awful smell down there! Not when she called me a whore!

I feel like my heart is laughing at me for trying to convince myself that I am not in love with Aphelele! What's happening in



my life? Where has Pearl gone to? Why don't I feel anything for her all of a sudden?

Nah... This organ is playing games on me! I know I love Pearl! I am sure of that! But am I too sure? Argh this is messed up!

When she squeezed my ass at the door I became really wet down there. I didn't know she had that much affect on me. That kiss sent shivers down my spine it reminds when she kissed me on the restrooms when we were still dating .... Dammit Aphelele! She just had to be a thorn in my life! I am ruined!!

Ever since that happened I am running away from her. I just feel like when I am around her I become too weak and agree to everything that she says! Why does she have so much control on me? Ayy maan she used some voodoo things on me! I know myself this is not me!

I am even afraid to go to Menziwa, I feel like he will see right thru me that I am horny which is of course caused by his niece that slapped me because she was jealous I am dating his uncle! Does that make sense to you? Well it doesn't to me!

I thought I had feelings for Menziwa but Aphelele had to resurface and drain those feelings! Argh!!

I need to release what's in between my legs so I head straight to my house and bump into this hag on the way.... You know sometimes I think that she is doing this on purpose.

She looks rather happy, I don't know but something about her makes my soul restless ayy!

Makhosazane: "We meet again"

Me: "And I am so glad we met again" (Sarcasm)

Makhosazane: "You're very disrespectful for a third wife"

That was really confusing...

Me: "I am sorry a what?"

Makhosazane: (laughing) "Argh I intend to forget that you're still new here so you get to hear the news lastly and I am guessing your "fiance" didn't tell you anything"

Me: "Tell me what?"

Makhosazane: "As per tradition I was supposed to get married to Menziwa since my husband the late Menzi passed on... We call it 'ukungenwa'. And since he's back from wherever he came from he must marry me first then your stupid wedding will come after!"

Me: "Wait what!?"

Makhosazane: "I am just getting my lemon water from the kitchen you know I got to start losing weight so my white dress could fit like a glove so excuse me dear sister wife"

She smiled a devious smile then made her way to the kitchen.

I felt my chest burning up! Why did he hide this from me! He was supposed to tell me this! I am no longer horny now I am mad as hell!! I need to talk to him!!

I make my way to the only place I know I will find him and that's MaShezi's house. As I am approaching it I hear loud moans and groans and I know what it means.

I quickly turn back and go back to my own house, locking the door behind me. I throw myself on the bed and cry... I am cautious not to make noise.

I am angry and hurt! Marry Makhosazane Ngcobo out of all people!? Over my dead body!! And why is he having sex with that stupid wife of his!! Mxm!!

To be continued...

40

A WEEK LATER

PEARL

I fixed my dress and looked at myself one more time in the mirror... I was looking beautiful no lie...

I was wearing a dress that is suitable for church.. it wasn't too short just knee length.. it is yellow in colour..

I didn't have any make up on just lip gloss. I was wearing olive sandals. I took my Bible and my bag which had all what I would need.

When I got out MaZwane was waiting for me in the kitchen... I could tell by how she was looking at me that she's getting impatient.

MaZwane: "Ayi awuqedi nawe" (you never finish)

Me: "I am sorry Mah I wasn't sure about this dress"

I pulled it down a bit.

MaZwane: "It's fine don't worry"

Me: "Okay"

MaZwane: "Let's go I don't want to be late"

Me: "Let me say goodbye to J.R"

MaZwane: "Okay you'll find me outside then"

I went to his room and he was busy giggling on his phone. I cleared my throat.

Me: "Mtaka Mama I am leaving"

Him: "Pray for me as well"

Me: "Okay I'll pray for you"

Him: "I love you sis"

Me: "I love you more"

I then left. Mom was waiting for me outside. Since we had no car we were walking to church.

At first it was hard, didn't think I'll make it but here I am taking it one step at a time. I almost sunk into depression but mom helped me thru it all.

She helped me regain my sanity since I almost lost it . The incest thing was messing me up, the death of my baby and Zimkita added on that and it was all too much. I guess finding my mother helped me a great deal.

J.R came back home and he is now schooling this side.

Living with my mother is very peaceful. I feel the motherly love that I have been yearning for all these years.

Because of money we ended up not burying Zimkita. She was cremated. I didn't have any money to arrange a whole funeral. We poured her ashes on the ocean, I just hope she rests in peace and not be an angry spirit.

My mother forced me to read the letter she left me and it broke my heart that she died thinking she didn't belong anywhere but the letter made me realize that she was just tired of living and wanted to rest. She was suffering a great deal. Yes I blame myself for neglecting her but Zimkita wasn't happy because she didn't have any direction in her life, she didn't have any parents and didn't have any decent job. She was just a prostitute.

I heard rumors about the new boss and he is said to be very brutal, I can't imagine myself going thru with that. I could tell by the scars on Zimkita's body that it was really bad. Jabu also passed away.. She had to be buried by the government since no family member came forward to come and claim the body. I felt really sorry for her.

Bakkie is... Is the only thing bothering me in my life right now. He's been sending endless messages threatening me and telling me how heartless I am for not grieving for our baby. What threw me off is the insults he kept on throwing in my way. Telling me if I date anyone it will be my last day on Earth. I showed my mother and she told me to leave him alone. When

he comes near me I will have a restraining order against him. I am just waiting for him to come near him and I'll run to the police.

It was Monday so we were going to the home cell prayer. I've joined church and my life has changed. Something inside of me truly believes that God is alive and he will help me out in every situation I am dealing with. Yesterday the pastor was preaching about being patient and I will just be patient and wait for God because his timing is never wrong.

I talked to J.R and we fixed things. Slowly but surely our relationship will get back to how it was and I won't do anything to mess this up again.

I've learned my lesson...

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

He plated soft kisses on my neck, I giggled.

Me: "Stop it! That's ticklish! You're childish yazi!"

Menziwa: "Babe don't go please"

Me: "I have to go and prepare supper for you"

Menziwa: "MaShezi will bring it njena"

Me: "I don't trust that woman, she'll just poison you and who am I going to marry?"

Menziwa: "Don't worry babe. Just three weeks left and this man right here will be all yours"

Me: "But not mine alone"

He sighed. I just looked at him.

Menziwa: "I will fix everything my baby don't worry"

Me: "Okay baby let me get going"

I left our house and went to the main one. When I got into the kitchen there was Mam'Zulu and MaShezi. I rolled my eyes.

Me: "Sanibona Mah" (Greetings Mah)

She just nodded. I didn't want to greet MaShezi cause I know she will cause unnecessary drama.

Mam'Zulu: "I salute your traditional healer Munu my son doesn't want to hear anything about you"

Me: "I am not bewitching him"

MaShezi: "I know my husband he will never neglect me and my kids"

Me: "Well I don't think you know him enough then baby girl"

Mam'Zulu: "Ukhohlakele Ntombazane!!" (You're evil!!)



Me: "Oh hunny you're not the first once or the last one to tell me that. You didn't like me in the first place so I am not surprised"

I looked at the pots and noticed that they have cooked. I took a plate and dished up for Menziwa. I wasn't hungry so I didn't dish up for me.

Me: "I would love to stay and chat ladies but my fiance is waiting for his food thank you very much"

I walked out.

Well yeah it happened. It turns out KaMangethe really knows her stuff and I can assure you that. I can't believe I doubted her.

She gave me the love portion and it works wonders. Menziwa has been loving me like a love struck teenager ever since.

We've been having picnics

romantic dinners and what not. On Saturday he proposed to me I couldn't be happier. He also moved out from the apartment he was renting with Mathapelo but I am not sure if Mathapelo is still living there. The thing of him marrying Mathapelo has died out and he wants to marry me instead and I couldn't be happier.

I also moved out from the house that Menzi bought for me, I have permanently moved in KwaZulu.

Of course no one supports the idea but my fiance approves it so I don't really need to stress. At first he was against the idea but the voodoo stuff made him agree to it all. To be honest I don't regret using the love portion. Besides me loving Menziwa he really has the money, he's really rich no wonder Mathapelo loved him so much.

Halfway on my way back to our house I took out the portion and sprinkled some on his food. KaMangethe warned me to not use it too much because it may have many consequences. It was really hard sprinkling a bit since I was using only one hand since the other one had the food, but I managed.

When I was done I stuffed the love portion back into my boobs. I opened the door and got in. After closing the door I gave him his food.

Me: "Your wife cooked"

Menziwa: "I am hoping it's not poisoned"

Me: "Yeah me too"

I watched him as he ate and smiled...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Me: "Ouch!"

Pheh: "Sorry"

Me: "Thought you said love bites aren't painful"

Pheh: "They are not. It's just that you are a cry baby"

Me: "I am not a cry baby it just hurts haw"

Pheh: "I will kiss it when I am done so it will hurt less"

Me: "But it won't take away the pain"

Pheh: "It will make it feel better"

Indeed after making the love bite she deep kissed it. The pain was there but the kiss indeed made it feel a whole lot better. Who knew love bite hurts like that? Ayy maan!

Pheh: "Let's do another one"

Me: "It will be the hundredth one"

Pheh: "This will be the last one"

Me: "You said that to the last one"

Pheh: "But this time around I promise"

Me: "Oh? You said that also"

Pheh: "This one will be on your ass"

Me: "No, thank you very much"

Pheh: "Please babe"

Me: "Nope"

She showed me her puppy eyes but I wasn't budging. There's no way I am going to let her make another love bite on me. It will be for the tenth time! Who has that many love bites? No one Well except me of course.

Me: "Bring me the mirror I want to see this one"

She passed me the mirror, it was hard to see since it was on my boob so I woke up and went to stand in front of the full length mirror.

This one was bigger than the others. I really loved it, even though it hurts a bit. I don't want to tell Aphelele though, she will do another one if I tell her I love this one.

Me: "Babe I am hungry"

Aphelele: "Let's go make something to eat"

Me: "I am tired though"

Aphelele: "Hop on my back"

I hopped on her back and we went to the kitchen. She placed me on top of the kitchen counter and started to make something quick for us to eat.

She was wearing shorts and a sport bra and I had nothing else but my panties.

I watched her as she moved her way around the kitchen.

Never in my life have I thought that I would be a femme in a lesbian relationship. I really thought I would be the butch one but nah.. this time around I get to be pampered and I am enjoying it shame.

Our relationship is brand new from the store. We have been dating for five days now. It hasn't been long and I am already feeling the love and it feels nice to be loved and pampered.

Aphelele moved in when the ceremony was over because apparently she had nowhere else to go. At first we couldn't stand each other. We kept on fighting everytime, but eventually we learned to be civil with each other.

When Menziwa started the "relationship" with Makhosazane I knew it was over for me but Menziwa hasn't said anything. He hasn't talked to me yet. He's just ignoring me.

I heard he proposed to Makhosazane and they are getting married in three weeks. I am sure Makhosazane is over the moon. She always had a thing for him.

Menziwa loves Makhosazane a lot these days and it's questionable since at first he didn't want anything to do with her. So why the sudden change of heart? But I'll deal with it when I have time cause right now I am too busy minding Aphelele shame.

What I like is that even though he isn't talking to me he still pays rent and sends me money for groceries and stuff. I am even surprised he still sends the girlfriend allowance. I didn't think he would continue sending me money but I am glad he is because I don't know what would I do shame. Since he sends me money I don't have anything to fight for honestly.

Once the feelings come back from wherever they are maybe just maybe I'll fight for him but now ngibusy shame.

Aphelele licks my cheek..

Me: "Ayy man!!"

She tickles me and I almost fall off from on top of the counter.

She giggles...

To be continued...

## MENZIWA ZULU

I don't think I'll make any sense but has anyone ever felt like you're not yourself? Like you're not living on your own body? Well that's how I am feeling these past week. I don't know what exactly is happening to me or I am just reading too much into it... It's confusing.

At first I didn't want anything to do with Makhosazane but now it's like I've fallen deeply in love with her. Am I crazy?

I sometimes just look at her and wonder how did I fall in love with her in an instant but when I start to think about that my chest feels hot and those thoughts quickly leave me and in a second I see her as my future wife, my universe..

As much as I love Makhosazane but something isn't making any sense. Ayy maan. My hallucinations have started yet again..

I love my kids also but their mother, I don't think I feel the same way about her anymore. I don't know but I think I have fallen out of love. Once we're married with Makhosazane I am going to kick her out of my house. Makhosazane says she's bewitching me and I am starting to believe it to be honest.

Mathapelo. Sighs. I have now realized that I don't love her it's just her movements on the bed that drive me insane. The reasons why I haven't stopped providing for her is that I made a

promise to take care of her since I took her from that filthy brothel and now I am doing just that. I don't hate her but I just don't love her anymore.

She's living with Aphelele at the flat we were renting and the time I left they were doing just fine I hope they are good. I'll go see them tomorrow.

I tried to open the brown envelope that I found the other day but Makhosazane took it from me and told me that it doesn't matter anymore. We just need to accept that he's gone and she is right.

I need to stop looking for things that won't get me anywhere. I need to focus on my future with her and our kids. Even if I do find out what happened to my twin brother that won't bring my brother back from the grave. He's dead I just need to make peace with that.

After I ate we got under the covers. I didn't want to go to the main house mainly because I know I will fight either with my wife or my mother. I've been spending a lot of time in here with MaNgcobo to avoid any alterations with them. I can't be going back and forth with them.

Business has been doing good also. I now have shares in the most high class hotel here in Johannesburg. I have 50% shares and that's good news. I am also signing a deal to sell my five



delivering trucks to a delivering company. I am getting richer by a day. All that legacy I will leave it to my wife, Makhosazane and my kids, and also my mother. Besides our fights he is still my mother and she deserves it cause she was there when I got successful. If it wasn't for her I don't know what I would have become.

My mother is my rock.

I snuggle closer to Makhosazane. She cuddles me closer and it feels good... To be with the one that I truly love and adore.

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Bella: "So what are your dreams? What do you want to achieve?"

Me: "You know I've always wanted to be a lawyer but because I had to provide for my family my dreams remained dreams"

Bella: "My teacher at school used to say if you don't have dreams then you're a fool"

I sighed and looked at her on my chest. I didn't know that Bella is this special. I have never had someone love nor care for me this way. Over this week I have developed feelings towards her.

Sighs, I know it wasn't supposed to happen but guys it happened okay. I fell in love with my boss's wife. It was

supposed to be a mere affair but she turned out to be what I was looking for.

I've been avoiding Jason in every way possible. I've been making lame excuses to see him. Even at work I leave early or I don't come to work at all. Work is draining me now. I feel like quitting. I mean what could go wrong since my woman is taking care of me.

Today I went to work. This is the first time in a very long time that I've actually worked the whole day. I couldn't wait to go home.

Speaking of home

MaNgcobo, sighs again. That woman will be the death of me am telling you!

I hate the idea of her falling in love with Menziwa! What if she falls in too deep then tell him that we killed and buried his twin brother at the back of my flat? Mom likes ruining things for me.

I'll just let her be for a while. I am guessing she got lonely but still she couldn't have gotten anyone she wanted just not Menziwa. Argh, what am I saying she had always had a thing for Menziwa so I am guessing she saw a chance and took it.

The confusing part is that when did Menziwa fall in love with my mother? Cause the last time I checked he didn't look at her

that way. Maybe I am reading way too much into this but something is fishy...

We were having a steamy session with Bella. She's really good in bed. She was on my chest. Circling her fingers on it.

She's been spending more time with me and I am starting to worry since she's married and I don't want Jason finding out about us then kill me in the process.

I hear a knock on the door and we stop laughing and look at each other. Who could it be at this time of the night?

Since Mom left we've been occupying her room.

I get her off my chest then get out of the bed. I wear my boxers since I was naked then made my way to the door at the kitchen.

My throat dried up when I saw Jason standing there. My heart was beating out of my chest. He looked at me from head to toe then walked in the house. I was praying that Bella doesn't do anything stupid and come to the kitchen because we will be screwed.

He was in his suite. I wonder why because it's late at night. Without any warning he kissed the living lights out of me. I kissed him back. I didn't want to kiss him, I wanted to puke. This is disgusting even for him. He looked at me.

Him: "Have I done anything wrong?"

Me: "No you haven't"

Him: "You have been ignoring me ever since you came back from the farms what's happening?"

Me: "It's nothing really"

Him: "Look I was serious when I told you that I love you. Just be patient with me. I will divorce Bella and we will live our lives together. The problem is we're married in community of property. She gets half of everything. Give me some time please"

I swallowed. This wasn't part of the plan. He is divorcing his wife because of me and his wife wants to divorce him because of me! This is a really messed up situation.

Me: "Okay I understand"

Him: "I'll send you some money tomorrow"

Me: "I would love that"

Him: "Can I spend the night here my wife is visiting her friends?"

Me: "I am not feeling well today"

Him: "Hope you'll be better soon"

Me: "Yeah me too"

Him: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

I said that through gritted teeth. He kissed me once more time then he left. I locked the door then sighed in relief. Well that was close. I hear his car driving off.

I went back to the room. Bella was still in the same position I left her in.

Bella: "Who was it?"

Me: "Your husband"

She looked at me terrified.

Me: "He was just suspecting you're cheating so he came by to vent"

Bella: "He must rest"

Me: "Don't neglect him because it's raising suspicions, we must spend time but not too much of it".

She nodded.

Bella: "I hear you but come back to bed now babe please"

I went to her...

APHELELE (PHEH)

I was holding her hair back as she vomited. She vomited until she had nothing to vomit out. I felt sorry for her. Ever since she

ate that pasta she started vomiting. I was really worried about Mathapelo.

She got up and went to rinse her mouth. I flushed. She has tears in her eyes. I held on her hand and led her back to bed. We got under covers and she started sniffing.

I don't know what was making her cry but I just brought her closer to me. After a while she stopped crying and looked at me with red and puffy eyes.

Me: "Baby what's wrong? Why are you crying?"

Her: "Why didn't you brush my back when I was vomiting?"

I couldn't stop myself I just bursted out and laughed at her. She looked at me in disbelief and continued to cry. Tjhoo kanti what's wrong?

Me: "Baby I am sorry"

Her: "I don't understand I am too emotional these days why?"

Me: "Shush babe don't cry we will be fine"

Her: "Okay fine I get it but why didn't you brush my back when I vomited?"

Me: "babe I was holding your hair back mos"

Her: "I don't really care!".

Me: "Tjhoo am sorry my love"

Her: "For that you're sleeping on the guest room"

I chuckled then looked at her. She wasn't joking she was mad serious.

Me: "Babe are you serious?"

Her: "Hamba Aphelele!!" (Go Aphelele)

Me: "Oh wow babe"

I tried to take my pillow but she pulled it away from me.

Her: "Leave my pillow! Go alone"

Me: "Ayt then"

I took my phone then went to stand by the door. I watched her as she cuddled my pillow. I can't believe she doesn't want to spend the night with me just because I didn't brush her back when she was vomiting I mean tf?!

You got to be kidding me!!

Me: "Babe I love you"

Her: "Good for you!"

Me: "Mathapelo I love you"

Her: "I know"

Me: "How about you?"

Her: "What about me?"

Me: "Do you love me?"

Her: "Yes I do"

I huffed in frustration. What is wrong with her!

Me: "Was it really that hard for you to tell me you love me?"

Her: "No it wasn't"

Me: "And why did you do that for?"

Her: "Tjhoo I thought you had already left"

Me: "You know what am out".

Her: "Oh hunny you should be"

Me: "You're so annoying!"

Her: "And you love me anyway"

I left and went to sleep in the guest room. It was cold without her. I was missing her like crazy even though I knew she was in the next room.

Yes I was in love with Pearl but I think I love Mathapelo more. She makes me happy effortlessly. If I wasn't stupid at the time I met her I would have seen how wonderful she is. I am really lucky to have her.



I am not letting her go. Come anything. She's the one I want, the one I want to spend my whole life with. I am glad my uncle didn't go on with the wedding but I am not glad he's with my mother but hey without her I wouldn't have my lover and best friend with me.

Mathapelo is a real diamond. She's my forever. If I had money I'll shower her with love as long as she lives.

Argh I am so madly in love right now I'll tell you about my life later on. Right now I love my babe guys...

To be continued...

42

THE FOLLOWING DAY

BAKKIE

I gulped down all the Hennessy that was left on my glass. It burned but not as much as the obsession I have in my heart, not the hate I have in my soul.. the loneliness I have in my life right now.

I don't need anyone to tell me I know. I am obsessed with Pearl. Not just any usual obsession.. dark obsession. I learned it on the net but it's not that bad, well to me of course...

Ever since my baby died I haven't doing well emotionally, mentally and physically. I am fading into this dark I was once in when I was still gay. I was judged left and right and center. My advice to you is stay true to yourself cause I know I wasn't true to myself. I dated a guy only to find out that he's playing for both teams and I was the fool! I hate myself for loving that man!! But I am glad I found THE MAN IN ME if I didn't I wouldn't have knew how pussy tasted like.

I've been drowning myself in alcohol and drugs. I've also got back to gambling. I left all of that when I fell in love but look at what love did to me! Again!! I hate feeling this way... It's torture!! That's why men decide to hurt women because they

avoid heart breaks. Now I don't blame them you know. Love is a scam!!

He walked in my office and sat down. He was one of my guys from back at "the house". I trusted him more than any guy there. He's got my back at all times.

Spider: "I'm back"

Me: "And?"

Spider: "There's nothing interesting that she does honestly"

Me: "Any guy you've seen near her?"

Spider: "No... Other than those jerks from church"

Me: "From those jerks is there any specific guy that she laughs too much with?"

Spider: "Well there is this guy that always walks with her after church always"

I clenched my jaws.

Me: "And who is that piece of rubbish?"

Spider: "Well I don't know him. He's..."

I banged the table with my fists. I was boiling inside.

Me: "Just find who he is! Every single thing there is to know about him!!"

Spider: "I'll tell you by the end of the day"

Me: "Good. You can leave now"

Spider: "We'll be in touch"

He got up and left.

I've been keeping tabs on her. I know what she does from Monday to Friday. I know it's wrong but I need to know if she has moved on and if she has I'll kill her next partner! I was very serious when I said if I can't have her then nobody will! Over my dead body!!

I transfer 5k to my mother. She returns it with a message that reads:

"We would appreciate it if you would leave us alone. Keep your money to yourself"

My mother is so stubborn! I send it to Pearl instead and she doesn't say anything. I know she needs it since she isn't working. Her pride won't just let her thank me or ask me for money...

PEARL

I look at the money on my bank account one more time. I have received the notification alerting me that Bakkie has sent me money. I didn't know whether to return or just keep it.

I could return it but I really need it. I am also scared of keeping it, it will seem like I am dependent on him.

I just don't want to be a financial strain on my mother. She doesn't earn much but she tries by all means to make sure we go to bed full and I applaud her for that.

She's a cleaner. She washes clothes

clean the house and babysit for some white lady with her husband. I don't want my mother to continue working while I am here but I don't have a job also.

I don't even have a matric certificate which makes things a lot harder for me. I dropped out on the tenth grade. School isn't my thing. The only thing I am good at is being a prostitute that's the only work that doesn't require a matric certificate, but I promised myself and the Lord that I will ever sell my body ever again because it is the temple of God.

I decide to keep the money. I really need it. I have ran out of toiletries. Just as I was about to go to the living room since I was still cleaning my room, my phone rings on my hand and it's Hlomla. I smile and answer..

Me: "Good morning"

Him: "How are you?"

Me: "I am great and how are you?"

Him: "I am good. Have you eaten breakfast yet?"

Me: "Nope"

Him: "Can I take you out for breakfast?"

Me: "I don't see why not"

Him: "I'll come fetch you in 30 minutes"

Me: "Okay"

I hang up and look for something better to wear. Once I find it I dress up and got out of my room with my sling bag.

I know Mom and J.R have left so I just lock the house and 30 minutes later he arrives. He has the latest Polo Vivo and it really looks good for a teacher.

Hlomla is a guy from church. He's very nice, sweet and down to Earth. We've been spending more time lately but he hasn't talked about love and stuff and I am glad he hasn't. My mother knows him and she thinks he could make a wonderful husband since he's from church.

I really like him a lot. He's really different from all the guys I've been with and I'd like to try something different from what I am used to... I would really like to see where this thing goes..

I finally decide to send a "Thank you" message to Bakkie and after that I block his number once again because I unblocked it when sending the message.

Sighs. That was really hard ...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I don't have moods. I don't cry easily but now it seems like everything is making me so emotional. I don't know what's happening to me.

When Pheh left me in bed yesterday I couldn't sleep so I went to join her in the guest room. She was fast asleep when I got there.

I am woken up by kisses all over my face and just as she was about to kiss my lips I quickly get out of bed and rush to the bathroom. I vomit everything that I've ate. I vomit until only air comes out.

I rinse my mouth and Aphelele is standing at the door looking at me. She has the most biggest eyes I have ever seen...

Me: "What?"

Her: "When Umhh you were sleeping with my uncle did you guys use protection?"

Come to think we have never used protection before.

We only used it the first time we slept together.

Me: "So?"

Pheh: "Mathapelo you can't be this dumb"

Me: "My name is babe"

I started crying. She has never called me by my name before.

Pheh: "you see what am I talking about? The vomiting, the mood swings like don't you notice something different?"

I shook my head no.

Pheh: "Mathapelo when last did you have your periods?"

Me: "My name is babe"

She groaned in frustration.

Pheh: "Babe when last did you get your periods?"

Me: "I don't know"

Pheh: "Babe are you serious?"

Me: "Yes"

Pheh: "You don't know what's going on?"

Me: "of course not"

Pheh: "You know what I am out"

Me: "And where are you going?"



Pheh: "to get a pregnancy test"

Just before I could ask more she was out. I don't know to where because the bathroom is right here.

Could it be that Aphelele is bisexual then slept with a guy then the guy got her pregnant? She cheated on me?!

I sank on my knees and started crying...

What's worse than finding out that your partner is pregnant with another man's child while you know that she's lesbian?

The thought of her being touched by another man left me vomiting again.

Argh!!!

To be continued....

## APHELELE (PHEH)

I am trying by all means to not think about Mathapelo being pregnant but I am failing. My heart just shutters together with my soul when I think about that.

When I have thought that I have found someone I truly love this happens... I am not thinking straight. This thing is slowly eating my heart and soul.

MaNkabinde removed the curse from me and I now feel lighter. I've decided to try the school thing next year. It's too late now. My NSFAS got approved I just need to find a suitable college for me. I was thinking of relocating but with Mathapelo in my life I changed my mind. If she's indeed pregnant then I'll relocate and come back for visits. It will do me good.

My uncle borrowed me his car, Polo Vivo. I'll be using it in the meantime. When I left the flat I went straight to the mall to get three pregnancy tests just to be sure. I don't know what's going to happen if she's indeed pregnant. My uncle loves his kids more than anything so I don't think he would let Mathapelo abort his baby.

But he doesn't know. After I've payed for the tests I go out. Right now I am headed to buy abortion pills from a certain

woman that I know. I know abortion is wrong but it's for the best you know.

We would do it the safe way but I fear that Mathapelo would just want to keep the baby. I'll give her the pills unknowingly and it would look like a miscarriage. I know the baby is innocent but it will take away my happiness when I've just found it.

I decide to buy her favorite juice before getting the pills so it will be easy for her to take them. I'll just crush them and put them on her juice. The pills will just kill the baby, I mean what could go wrong? Nothing right? Exactly.

As I was taking the juice someone else reached out to take it. I quickly turned back to find my soulmate looking at me shocked. Well I am shocked myself..

Me: "Pearl"

Her: "Cherry"

My heart bleeds as I remember how I would blush when she called me like that. She hands me the juice.

Her: "You took it first"

I take it from her.

Me: "Umhh... Thanks"

Her: "You look good by the way"

Me: "Thanks not bad yourself"

Her: "This juice actually reminds me of Mathapelo"

Me: "Oh yeah.. an actually buying it for her. You know how pregnant women are"

Her eyes widened.

Her: "She's pregnant?"

Me: "Umhh yes"

Her: "The baby is yours?"

Me: "Yep"

Her: "Oh.. am just surprised"

Me: "By how did I got her pregnant?"

Her: "Oh no! Am just surprised she got pregnant after the number of abortions she did when we were still prostitutes"

Me: "Oh yeah that. I am surprised myself but I guess we're lucky"

Her: "Oh well lucky you guys. Congratulations then"

Me: "Thanks"

Her: "Can I have your numbers so we could you know talk?"

Me: "I don't think my girlfriend would like that"

Her: "But we're not getting back together we're just talking. I want to apologise actually"

Me: "Don't worry about it. It's water under the bridge"

Her: "Oh I'll guess I'll see you then"

Me: "Yeah I don't think so"

Her: "Take care"

Me: "You too. I'll make sure to invite you on our wedding"

She faked a smile and left. She didn't even take the juice anymore. I'm starting to think she didn't want it. She just wanted to talk to me.

I smile and go pay then leave so I could get home to Mathapelo. I will see the abortion pills later. I get into my car and drive to our flat.

MAKHOSAZANE NGCOBO

Menziwa left in the morning to sort out our legacy. We need the money so we can't be glued together all the time. I miss him already.

This day will be a drag cause I know MaShezi and Mam'Zulu will be abusing me verbally for the whole day.

My heart almost sank to my knees when I saw that brown envelope in Menziwa's hands. I don't know how he got hold of it.

You don't want to know what's in that envelope. It will ruin me and I will do life on prison. I have to get rid of it before something worse happens. I just don't know where he left it. I've looked everywhere but I can't find it. I also don't want to ask for it cause it will raise suspicions to him so much that he will decide to open it. I am just grateful for the portion because it makes things easier for me.

I use the portion three times a week. When I first started I used it five times a week. I can't always rely on portions to make him love me. When he falls deeply in love with me I'll stop using the portion and he will love me using his own love not the forced one that I am initiating.

I am still debating whether to go to the main house or not. While I am still deciding my phone chimes indicating a message alert. I reach for it and plug out the charger since I was still charging it.

A message from "My Sister" reads:

\*I'm still waiting for that R2000 for the love portion. Please pay me as soon as possible and please tell your son to pay me as

soon as possible before I rain terror on him and he will regret the day he decided to be a witch like his mother\*

I read the text message a couple more times before actually transferring her the money. She sends a thank you text after. I don't understand though. My son? The only son I have is Tebogo and Tebogo isn't a witch. Or he is?

The reason why I saved her number as "My Sister" it's because she can call me when I am with Menziwa and why would I explain why I have a witch doctor's number on my phone? KaMangethe is really famous so I can't risk it.

I decide to call Tebogo just to confirm that indeed he's performing witchcraft.

He answers on the second ring.

Him: "Makhosazane"

Me: "I'm still your mother Tebogo!"

Him: "Oh really? I even forgot I have a mother"

Me: "Are you a witch now?"

Him: "What are talking about?"

Me: "A certain KaMangethe tells me that you owe her money. Who are you bewitching Tebogo?"

Him: "Your daughter"

My heart almost stops. My mouth becomes dry in an instant.

Me: "My daughter?"

Him: "Yes.. who do you think was causing all her misfortunes? I was okay!"

Me: "Why would you do that to your own sister?" That comes out as a whisper.

Him: "I was mad at her father! He took away my happiness!! I suffered a great deal in that man's hands! So why would I let his daughter have it the easy way?"

Me: "But she didn't do anything wrong to you"

Him: "Look who's talking.. Mommy Dearest. You're sounding like someone who was treating her like a princess while you weren't!!"

Me: "You're evil Tebogo!! I'm going to tell her!!"

Him: "An apple doesn't fall far away from the tree. Well dear mother I'm just like you! Oh and when you tell her that don't forget to tell her that you helped cover up for his father's death and we actually buried him behind my flat! Also tell that stupid husband of yours to invite me on your wedding. I hope that love portion is enough to reach your wedding!"



After that he hangs up. I stand in the same position for a few minutes then sit down on my bed trying to process the news I just received.

So all along things have been bad for Aphelele his brother was actually behind it? My soul shatters at the thought of him doing that. I've been a terrible parent to my daughter and she didn't deserve it honestly. She deserves all the love in the world cause she's such an amazing daughter. I can't believe I actually kicked her out when I found out she's lesbian.

I shed a few tears then I wrote a long paragraph to Aphelele apologizing for all the things I've put her through. I know she won't reply but I know she will read it.

I exhale when I realize the damage that I've done, and there's nothing I can do to actually fix it the damage is done.

I hear a bang on the door and Mam'Zulu shouts from outside

Mam'Zulu: "The house isn't going to clean itself! It's time to wake up!! If you want to be a makoti you should also play your part! Don't annoy me tuu!!"

I get up and go do some chores before they cut my head off...

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

After that heated call with my mother I couldn't focus on my work. I needed something to distract me but what? I can't leave

work early. I've done it so many times. Jason will end up firing me. After all here at work it's strictly professional.

I gulp down all the water from my 500ml bottle. It isn't enough though. I want something strong, but I know better than to drink at work.

Jason has been cooped up in his office for hours. He didn't even go out for lunch that's how occupied he is.

I heard him talking about a big client's case that he needs to prepare for. I hope all goes well for his case.

I'm also working on getting some sort of qualification. I can't be someone's P.A forever. I want to be my own boss. I'm not getting any younger. I want to leave a legacy for my kids.

Speaking of kids I remember something real quick. Me and Bella haven't used condom before and I didn't hear her say anything about being on some sort of preventing method. My heart sinks into my knees at the thought of her carrying my seed while he's married to the man I'm having an affair with

That thought alone leaves my mouth dry. Bella can't be pregnant!! Okay deep breath.

I take my phone then call her. It rings for a while then she answers...

Her: "My world"

Me: "Babe are you on any contraceptives?"

Her: "No, why?"

My heart starts beating fast. This can't be happening!

Me: "Babe we haven't been playing it safe"

Her: "Yeah so?"

Me: "You might be pregnant!!"

Her: "That would be actually great. I could finally divorce that bastard!"

Me: "What!?"

Her: "I'm out to buy pregnancy tests I'll tell you how it goes I love you"

The line goes dead after that. I feel light headed. This isn't happening to me. Yeah sure I love Bella but she can't be pregnant! At least not now! Her husband is going to kill me! That I'm sure about.

My phone indicates a message and I quickly read it. It says:

"Your time is up! You'll regret not paying me my money!!  
Enjoy"

As soon as I realize that it's KaMangethe I transfer 5k into her account. Another one follows

"I don't want it anymore. But thanks anyway. I'll be using it to buy groceries. You're going to enjoy the terror I'm about to rain upon you boy boy"

I swallow a lump on my throat. This is bad terribly bad. I really messed up. If this is karma then I'm sorry Apehelele! Oh what have I done!!?

My phone indicates another message and I'm hesitant to read it but I do anyway. The damage is already done.

"Babe next week I'll be meeting up with my lawyer to discuss the divorce with Bella. After that we'll be happy together without having to hide our relationship. I really love you. Tonight we're both going to a hotel. I've really missed you"

The text leaves me numb. Jason is planning on divorcing Bella for me? I feel hot more than ever...

This can't be happening to me! Why me?!

To be continued...

PEARL

What Aphelele said really got to me. They're going to have a baby? It should be me not her!! Mathapelo was my best friend, she shouldn't be breaking the girl code... That's not how it goes! This is wrong very wrong!

After that heated conversation I couldn't continue with groceries anymore, I was just too angry. Hlomla was accompanying me to do groceries, but I left him at his car to get a few things which I didn't get.

I opened the door of the car then banged it when I got in. Hlomla looked at me, well I didn't care

Hlomla: "O...k...a...y"

Me: "Just get me home!"

Hlomla: "Where are the groceries?"

Me: "Well do you see any groceries wena?! Don't annoy me!!"

Hlomla: "What made you angry?"

Me: "Even if I told you there's no way you're gonna solve what's bothering me!"

Hlomla: "I'm just trying to help you know"

Me: "Don't bother! I don't need no help!"

Hlomla: "I think you do"

Me: "Why are you being a nuisance?! I don't want to talk okay!  
Get that thru your thick skull!!"

I was now shouting. I was really boiling inside! This thing got to me so bad!

Hlomla: "I think you should get out of my car. I can't deal with such a disrespectful person like you. I didn't do anything to you! I was tryna be a nice guy but am guessing your problems are just too much to deal with, even for you! You can't expect me to keep quite and let you run over my head! I'm human too! I need to be respected!"

Me: "And how am I supposed to get home?"

Hlomla: "I don't know! Matter of fact I don't care! Figure it out! You're a big girl! Since you know how to be disrespectful then you should know how to get home"

I got out of his car then banged the door again. How am I supposed to get home?

He speeds off after I've gotten out. I sigh after realizing that I left my shopping bags in his car. After the breakfast this morning he decided to take me out for shopping then we will buy groceries but now I'm left stranded.

Good thing I have my bag with me so I'll just have to withdraw cash from the money Bakkie sent me.

When I'm walking to the ATM I get a call from my mother..

Me: "Mah"

Her: "Where are you?"

Me: "At the bank"

Her: "What did you do to Hlomla?"

Me: "I didn't do anything"

Her: "Him being this mad isn't nothing"

Me: "We had a fight, nothing serious"

Her: "Ayy Pearl I don't like your attitude you should quit it Hlomla is a wonderful young man".

Me: "We'll talk when I get there"

Her: "Okay bye"

Me: "Bye"

Well that was quick...

I don't think my mother knows that I'm bisexual but I'll tell her later on not now because it seems like she really likes Hlomla for me.

Lucky for me the ATMs are empty so there's no need for me to stand on a line...

I withdraw a few notes then head to the taxi rank...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Aphelele came back with three pregnancy tests. When she explained to me that they are for me and her suspicions I totally understood. To even think that I was angry thinking that she cheated on me leaves me in disbelief. Aphelele wouldn't cheat on me, well that's what she told me.

Aphelele has her head bowed down. She is starring at me with bloodshot eyes to indicate she's been crying. Her eyes show pain and defeat.

I pee on the third pregnancy test, clear blue. I'm even nervous to look at it.

After fifteen minutes I look at it and find "PREGNANT" starring at me. Aphelele takes the test from my hands and drops a few more tears. I sigh in defeat..

Aphelele: "Tell me about your past abortions"

My jaw almost drops on the floor. How did she find out about the abortions that I've did before?

I choose to tell her the truth because it seems like she already knows so lying to her isn't an option.



Me: "I've had four abortions"

Her eyes widen...

Aphelele: "Why weren't you on birth control?"

Me: "I was okay! I just don't know how did I got pregnant"

Aphelele: "You're going to abort that baby"

Me: "Is that a question?"

Aphelele: "No it's not. I am telling you"

Me: "I'm not going to do that"

Aphelele: "Excuse me?"

Me: "I'm not aborting this baby"

Aphelele: "Argh come on Mathapelo! What's different about this one? I mean you've done tons of abortions before why keep this one?"

Me: "I've done things in the past. Things that I'm not proud of. After all the abortions I've done I didn't think I'd get pregnant again but God decided otherwise. This is a second chance to me to be a better person. Who knows maybe this is the last baby I'll ever have"

She groans in frustration.

Aphelele: "Babe you don't get it don't you? This baby will ruin our lives! Menziwa will want this baby to come and live with him that means that you'll go and live with him and what about our relationship?"

Me: "You don't have to worry about me getting back to Menziwa it will never happen. We're over! Just trust me for once. Maybe this is a chance for us to be parents together"

She shakes her head. I know it's hard but I just won't abort this baby. It doesn't feel right. I'm given one last chance to be a mother so I must take it.

Me: "Babe I'm hungry"

She heads to the kitchen and I follow her there. I get on top of the counter.

Although it's a struggle but I finally manage.

She looks at me

Her: "Since you vomit a lot what do you want to eat?"

Me: "You"

Her: (chuckles) "you can't be serious"

Me: "Maybe I am"

She bites her lower lip then makes her way to me. She kisses me. Aphelele gives out the best kisses. One that could make you wet. One that can make you forget that you're actually kissing a woman not a guy.

Our lips dance in motion as she starts taking off my clothes while massaging my already erect boobs.

I moan in her mouth. She continues to kiss me.

MENZIWA ZULU

Today I didn't go to work. I just went straight to my lawyer to go change my will.

I didn't remove MaShezi from the will, I just couldn't. It will be totally unfair to her. That woman has been nothing but a wonderful woman to me. She helped me raise my family and took care of us.

I also added Mathapelo on my will. I know I said I'm done with her but I took her in so she's my responsibility. I just need to make sure that she's taken care of. I also added my niece, Aphelele. She's my responsibility now. No one else's.

After that I couldn't go home because MaNgcobo will question why did I come home early. Well you know how women are.

I don't know where this sudden love for her comes from but I really love and enjoy spending time with her. I can't go a day

without listening to her or talk to her it's like she used love portion on me that's how deep my love is for her.

I decide to call her as I am sitting on my car, I've just got out of the firm where my lawyer works and my will is updated.

It rings then she answers.

Her: "Baba"

Me: "Mashiyamahle"

I could tell she's blushing.

Her: "How are you?"

Me: "I'm fine and how are you hunny?"

Her: "I'm good my love I'm just tired"

Me: "Rest baby"

Her: "you know I can't . Mam'Zulu would kill me"

Me: "Tell her your husband said so"

Her: "I'll tell her Baba"

Me: "Don't cook I'll bring us something"

Her: "Thank you babe we really appreciate it"

Me: "Okay my love I'll see you later then"

Her: "Okay I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

My heart blushes when she says that. After that she hangs up.

I drive to the flat Mathapelo and Aphelele are renting. It's been a while since I last saw them.

It's not a long drive and I arrive there almost immediately. I see the Polo parked and I know they are both here.

I wonder if they're still fighting because the last time I checked they were cat and dog.

I don't bother knocking and luckily for me it's not locked.

The sight I find is very disturbing and makes me want to puke. Aphelele is eating Mathapelo's coochie like it's something nice. You can see that they are both enjoying.

I didn't know Aphelele was lesbian. Now I understand. Aphelele wasn't happy about our relationship because she wanted Mathapelo to herself.

I guess they don't notice me because they continue with Mathapelo moaning at the top of her lungs. She's really enjoying.

I clear my throat and they both get up in shock when they realize it's me. They hurry up to the rooms then come back all dressed up.

I honestly don't know how to feel about this. When I try to revisit the love I have for Mathapelo, I think of MaNgcobo and those feelings suddenly vanish.

Mathapelo is standing behind Aphelele and they both don't look at me in the eyes. Aphelele is rubbing at her already messed up hair.

Aphelele: "Uncle"

Me: "Uncle my foot! What is this?! Huh?! Oh now I can understand why you slapped Mathapelo when we announced our relationship? It's because you wanted her for your own selfish reasons!! Bastard!"

Aphelele: "I can explain"

Me: "And wena Mathapelo how could you do this to me!! Sleep with my niece! You were dating me for crying out loud! You don't have any shame maan!"

Aphelele: "Uncle you don't understand!"

Me: "Make me then!"

Mathapelo: "Menziwa you don't understand! You made me do this! You chose another woman and left me on my own! What was I supposed to do! Watch you play happy family with her? You treated me like dirt!"

That angered me I found myself slapping Aphelele repeatedly.  
Mathapelo tried to pull me of of her but I was having non of it.

Mathapelo: (shouting) "this stress isn't good for the baby!  
Please stop it!"

Everything paused for a moment. I let go of Pheh and looked at  
her in disbelief.

Me: "What?"

Pheh: "Damn you Mathapelo!!!"

Mathapelo: "I said I'm pregnant okay! You're going to be a  
father"

Without any warning I went to her and hugged her.

I can't believe this! I'm going to be a father...

To be continued....

45

A MONTH LATER

APHELELE (PHEH)

I opened a chair for her and she sat down...

Pearl: "I didn't think I would be here with you after everything you said the last time we met"

Me: "Yeah me too"

Pearl: "Where's your baby mama?"

Me: "Sorry who?"

Pearl: "Mathapelo"

Me: "Oh that one. I was lying that wasn't my baby, it's my uncle's"

She sighed in relief.

Pearl: "Well that's much better"

Me: "Yeah but I don't want to talk about that"

Pearl: "I understand"

Me: "So what's has been happening in your life?"

Pearl: "Well my boyfriend was stabbed to death and we buried him last week"



Me: "I'm sorry for your loss"

Pearl: "Thank you. Although his mother blames me for his death"

Me: "Why?"

Pearl: "Argh that's the story for another day"

I leaned over and removed hair that was on her face.

When I saw her a month ago she wasn't the Pearl I know. She was like some church woman of some sort, but now she's the Pearl we all know, the makeup girl and the Queen of fashion. She's back to her usual self not the granny she was suddenly.

She cleared her throat.

Her: "Cherry"

Me: "Yes Vanilla Queen"

Her: "I've been meaning to apologise about what happened. I'm really sorry that I lied to you"

Me: "It's okay I understand"

Pearl: "Thanks that really means a lot"

Me: "Can I confess?"

Pearl: "Yeah sure"

Me: "I'm still very much in love with you"

She blushed.

Pearl: "Well me too"

Me: "Would it be wrong if I said I want us to try again?"

Pearl: "No it wouldn't be. But I have terms though?"

Me: "I'm listening"

Pearl: "You won't leave me for another girl especially Mathapelo"

Me: "Don't worry my love I won't. Mathapelo is with Menziwa now so I don't think she's coming back and if she is I won't get back with her"

Pearl: "Well then sure why not?"

Me: "Well you said you buried your boyfriend last week wouldn't it be a problem?"

Pearl: "Argh our relationship wasn't that deep so it's cool I guess. We weren't even intimate"

Me: "Well then I'm happy to hear that. I also have some terms"

Pearl: "Tell me then babe"

Me: "You'll never leave me for another guy"

Pearl: "Only if you treat me right"

Me: "I'll treat you like a Queen my love"

Pearl: "I'd love that"

Me: "Would it be too early to say I want you to come and sleep over at my flat?"

Pearl: (laughing) "hold your horses tiger this girl ain't going nowhere"

Me: "Okay then babe"

Pearl: "Let us order food then"

Me: "Yeah go ahead"

She called the waiter over to our table then she ordered food for us. I just looked at her and smiled.

Pearl: "Why are you looking at me like that?"

Me: "I'm just looking at my soulmate"

Pearl: "I love you Cherry"

Me: "I love you more Vanilla Queen"

Mathapelo is two months pregnant. Don't look at me like that, yes I've been counting. After that conversation with Menziwa they both decided that it's best Mathapelo moves in with Menziwa so he can keep a close eye on her cause apparently she's carrying a precious cargo.

A week later after she moved she called it quits. I'm starting to think me and Mathapelo were never meant to be cause every time we start our relationship something happens.

I've never heard from her ever since.

Since my uncle found out about us he stopped sending me money. I'm guessing he's just angry at me cause I dated his baby momma.

Rent was really expensive so I moved out and rented a much cheaper flat, 1k a month. I also had to find a job. It was hard but I got it at a very struggling carwash at town. I work with the guys who wash cars. I don't earn much but at least it's something. I earn 1k a week.

I've tried reaching out to my mother but she's busy hung up on the fact that Mathapelo is back to ruin her marriage. She got married traditionally with Menziwa two weeks back and they signed at home affairs. I didn't bother asking Tebogo. I don't remember the last time I spoke to him. I also tried to reach out to the Zulu family but they're angry at me after uncle Menziwa told them that I was dating Mathapelo. Everyone was disappointed in me.

So basically I'm on my own, I have no one in my corner. I guess we all learn to be independent the hard way.

Our food finally arrived and we started eating.

I just hope Pearl pays for the lunch cause honestly I'm broke and I hate it.

My uncle also took his car so basically I'm stranded... Well that's life for you...

BAKKIE

After a long time of struggling I finally killed that bastard that was making a move on my woman.

Yes you got that right I'm the one who sent Spider to go and stab Hlomla to death. He was useless anyway.

I've been doing really better. I have finally accepted that my baby is gone and he's never coming back. I've learned to live with it.

Some things are really hard to accept for example it's hard accepting that Pearl is moving on with someone else and that someone is not me. It kills me every time.

I'm also back in business. That money from "the house" I decided to buy drugs from Jason. I know it's wrong but it's all I know. Jason is my supplier and I sell it to people who needs some fix. It's going really well. I told Spider to stop following Pearl and run the business instead. Spider is my right hand man.

The reason why I stopped keeping tabs on Pearl is because I know she's still grieving so I know she won't do something stupid that might piss me off and make me end up killing someone again.

Speaking of her I send her a text to remind her that she's still my wife. I text her:

"I told you that if I can't have you no one will, and that my wife it's a promise and I don't break my promises"

I smile deviously after sending that text oh how I enjoy installing fear on her.

Love can really fuck up you mentally. I was ready to do everything and anything for Pearl but guess what she had to be my cousin and hurt me. Just when I thought I found love. I was ready to leave all these illegal things for her but this happens. This is totally wrong! People date their cousins all the time!

I write a long paragraph to my mother (MaZwane) apologizing and telling her I've realized how wrong I am blah blah blah. I've been doing this for a week now I just hope she budes and decides to forgive me cause I really need her on my corner.

The plan is to make my mother believe that I've really changed so she can allow me in her life again so I could be closer to Pearl. She's a church woman so I know it will be easy to get thru her. She won't give me much trouble.

After sending the text message to my surprise I get a reply from her. It reads:

"You've been doing this for a while now and it shows how regretful you are. I forgive you son. How about we talk things thru tomorrow over dinner?"

I text her back almost immediately agreeing to the dinner and she texts me back with time.

You see I told you. It wasn't that hard. I stop myself from sending her more money cause she will think I'm buying her forgiveness. I send it to Pearl instead. I've been doing that for a while now.

I like that she's still very much dependent on me. That's my girl!

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

Mxm Mxm Mxm Mxm Arghha!!

Mathapelo! Mathapelo! Mathapelo!

Tjhoo this girl is out to ruin me yazini! You know when someone talks about a dark cloud hanging over your family.

That person is talking about that witch named Mathapelo!

She is really that jealous vele? She had to get pregnant for my husband! The liver of that witch! Argh!

Menziwa has been treating her like an egg ever since he found out she's pregnant. He no longer gives me that much attention anymore. My ears are tired from hearing about "Umama ka Khuselo". Khuselo my foot! Can't he see that this girl is after his money? Stupid old man.

I also upgraded. I am now using the portion two times a day, everyday. I know KaMangethe told me not to but my marriage is at stake here. I'll do anything and everything to save it from that goat with a flat ass!

I'm just glad that they're not talking about wedding or getting back together. Just the baby only and boy am I happy to hear that? Yes I am.

For once in my life I'm just happy to be hating the same person with my mother inlaw. She also doesn't approve the Mathapelo baby thing but what can we do?

That witch Zandile (MaShezi) is happy. I don't know when she has started to like Mathapelo all of a sudden but I guess she's doing that to spite me. She hates me anyway.

Back to my mother inlaw case. Well apparently since Menziwa broke up with Mathapelo, she dated Aphelele. Think of it! My whole Daughter! And that didn't sit well with Mam'Zulu.

I'm also surprised to learn about their relationship. Huh? Chisa Wena Girl!!



I'm just glad it happened because we have found something common with my mother inlaw.

Tomorrow I have an appointment with my doctor. I want him to run some tests so I can see if I could still get pregnant. I also want to give Menziwa a baby. It will make our marriage even much more stronger.

It's not competition but it's about who has the ball and right now it seems like Mathapelo has Menziwa in her corner and that's not acceptable. If MaShezi hated her we would have made a great team but that one has a mind of her own.

Aphelele ignored my text message where I was apologizing and I just decided to let her be. I don't wanna rush her into anything. When I get time I'll go and speak to her in person.

I last talked to Tebogo a month ago. He doesn't pick up my calls so I just let him be. He's still angry as well I know him.

I fill up the bathtub with water then pour my foam bath and bathing salts. I need this bath. I've been stressing a lot lately.

I soak myself. 10 minutes later Menziwa walks in the bathroom. He greets me. I'm surprised he's here at this time when he's supposed to be at work.

Me: "You're home early"

Menziwa: "Yes Umama ka Khuselo wanted hot wings"

I roll my eyes at that statement.

Me: "Okay"

Menziwa: "I'll see you later I just came to drop the hot wings then go back to work"

Me: "I love you Babakhe"

Menziwa: "I love you too mkami"

Me: "You're supposed to say Mamakhe baby"

Menziwa: "I love you too Mamakhe"

Me: "Okay bye baby"

Menziwa: "Bye"

He kisses my lips then leaves.

I'm just glad he still loves me. I smile...

To be continued...

## MENZIWA ZULU

Nothing could ever get to the feeling I got when I found that I'm going to be a dad for the fourth time. To me it's a blessing. I really love kids, very much... They mean the world to me.

I believed that Mathapelo is pregnant because lesbians can't get each other pregnant well that's quite obvious. I've seen that MaNgcobo is jealous and according to her she's the baby mama. That's craziness on another level if you ask me.

My mother has talked to me about the death of my brother and not knowing his whereabouts. She's really hurt not to know what happened to her son and I totally understand that.

Without my wife's knowledge I decided to continue with my own investigation. My mother suggested that we consult then cause misfortune for the person or people who were part of my father's disappearance but I think that's just absurd cause we really don't know what happened to him. My mother suspect that someone had something to do with it but I don't believe it...

When I came home to bring the hot wings I went to my study and got the envelope and good thing that MaNgcobo was still bathing. I didn't have to go thru a lot of things.

After driving to my office I tell my P.A to cancel all my meetings cause I really want to know what really happened...

When I open it I found bunch of photos of a young boy. Behind the picture "Tebogo Mohlakoana" is written. Tebogo is MaNgcobo's first born. There are a lot of documents that I'm guessing are for work purposes.

I find an old diary of his, I don't know what my twin brother was doing with a diary. My brother loved to read and write. He would always had a diary for every year and he wouldn't go a day without writing something. I guess this is the dairy he had before he went missing.

My throat dries out after reading a few pages on his diary.

Menzi was gay but was afraid to come out in the public. He never loved women or looked at them that way.

I read a few more and find the shock of my life when I find that he's been molesting the poor boy. Menzi was sleeping with Tebogo!! This is disgusting! He had a nerve to molest an innocent child!! And according to what I've been reading it seems like this has been going on for a while now..

I can't believe this! I thought I knew my brother! I didn't think he would do such an act of evil.

No one I mean no one old or young person, man or woman should go thru rape. It's traumatizing.

What amazes me the most is that MaNgcobo wasn't aware that her son is being molested, like which parent doesn't notice change in your child's behavior. I'm starting to question her parenting.

The last date he wrote on his diary leaves questions though... I mean he wrote that he's going to molest the poor child once more since MaNgcobo wasn't going to be around. My question is what really happened because he didn't write that he was going to go anywhere like he wrote on other days. He just wrote that he's going to be doing that gruesome act the whole day...

This leaves many questions as to what happened?

I know some may say I should let go of this but I can't. This happened many years ago but it's for my mother's peace honestly...

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Oh well things haven't going well for me this past few weeks. First of all I lost my job, I made a lot of mistakes then got fired. Jason couldn't do a thing about that.

His behavior is questionable these days. He doesn't call nor text me like before. He doesn't even send me money or spend on me like he did before. It's like he fell out of love for me, he's no longer the Jason I know.

On the other hand Bella. Well indeed she's pregnant and counting the days it's mine. If it was any other day with someone different I would be happy that she's pregnant with my child but now I'm not. She's somebody's wife not mine.

Ever since we found out that she's pregnant she's been obsessed with me. She even doesn't spend much time at her house because apparently the baby wants me. She's a month pregnant now.

Bella owns a boutique so she doesn't bother me that much in regards of money and taking care of her financially. She just wants my love and dick only.

Right now I'm at their house. We're just chilling watching "What Happened To Monday?" on Netflix. It's a double storey house, well what did I expect they are whites so they live a lavish life.

If someone told me that I'd date a white couple someday I would have laughed at your face. It's amazing how life could change in a blink of an eye.

I know some may judge me but I don't care really. A good moment only comes once in a lifetime.

As we are watching our movie

the door opens. Instead of their maid walks in the man of the house himself.

Everything just moves in slow motion as I watch his face go from being happy to being confused. I think he is confused about why am I in his house, in his bed naked with his wife. His anger turns into disappointment. He has a brown envelope in his hands.

Jason: "Oh Bella!"

Bella looks defeated like she has seen a ghost. He looks at me, I look anywhere else but him.

Jason: "You know in this envelope are divorce papers I was going to serve my wife for the man that I told myself I truly loved above my wife. Only to find out that the man I love is also having an affair with my wife! Meaning he's playing us both! All this time I thought you loved me! But you just had to play us both! I'm guessing my wife also loves you. This woman doesn't date anyone she doesn't love! I got played! My heart is in pieces right now all in the name of love!! You broke my heart and family I'm gonna mess you up till you can't recognize yourself. I will show you how love is supposed to be!"

Bella looks at me in disgust after all the revelations.

Bella: "How could you?! I loved you Tebogo!! You slept with me and also slept with Jason!! The nerve!!"

Her eyes filled with tears immediately.

I'm left dumbstruck. I'm out of words honestly. Bella quickly turns to her husband. She gets out of bed naked as she is and go kneel in front of him.

Bella: "Baby I'm sorry I also forgive you for cheating on me. Please get this man out of our lives and things will get back to normal. We will forget that you're gay please my love let's fix this. I will even abort his baby, please my love"

His face changes immediately when he hears about the pregnancy. I don't know when he pulled out his gun but all I heard next were gunshots.

The gun went off five times. The sound left my eyes. With the voice left in me I screamed...

Me: "Bella!!!!"

MATHAPELO (PELO)

As I'm indulging in my hot wings MaNgcobo walks in my house.

She has on perfume. I quickly hurry and vomit everything that I've ate. Argh! Pregnancy!!

She knows that perfume makes me vomit but just because she likes getting on my nerves she will just put it on. After a short I'm done. I rinse my mouth then stand on the doorway of the bathroom then look at her making herself comfortable on my bed. She looks at me from head to toe in disgust.



MaNgcobo: "Oh sorry I forgot that you're pregnant"

Me: "It's okay. How can I help you?"

I know she didn't forget, she just likes getting my attention.

MaNgcobo: "Since you're now part of my family I want to say a few things to you. Menziwa may be your baby daddy but he's still my husband and I'd like you to respect that, not for me but for your own good cause I can see you desperately need a place to stay"

I chuckle. This woman likes testing me I can see.

Me: "You know you should really give me the number of your witch doctor because wow she really knows her work"

MaNgcobo: "It's called love darling"

Me: "You and I both know that's not true. It's just a matter of time then everyone will see your true colors my love"

MaNgcobo: "You're not the first one probably not the last to tell me that so I'm used to it. MaShezi was saying the same thing you know. Well I guess that's where you both found common ground"

Me: "If that will be all then you know your way out"

MaNgcobo: "Once that baby is out, you will go back to where ever hellhole you came out from witch!"

Me: "They do say a witch can see another witch"

MaNgcobo: "Enjoy it while it lasts!"

She exits leaving the door open. I'm grateful for that because I can't deal with her perfume.

Life changed for me. Ever since I got pregnant Menziwa treats me like an egg, it's like I'll just fall and break.

I decided to end my relationship with Aphelele because I could see that things were hard for her. I did it for her own good. I couldn't let her suffer because of me.

I've decided to leave this whole dating and relationship thing and focus on me and my baby. When this baby gets out I will leave it with MaShezi then go and study. I haven't decided what I will do yet but I know I can't be dependent on someone forever.

I've talked to Menziwa about this and luckily for me he agreed and even offered to pay for my studies. It's only a matter of time.

I would have a smooth pregnancy if it isn't for this devil they call MaNgcobo. That woman doesn't like me.

I've also buried my feelings for Pearl. I'm going to let her go live her life. I'm not going to force things. I'll just let her be. I heard

she got back together with Aphelele and this time around I'm actually happy for them. I'm tired of being bitter.

I'm also grateful for MaNgcobo's portion that she used on Menziwa because I don't know how would have I escaped from that trap of a marriage. Yes I didn't plan on getting pregnant but I'll take care of my baby with everything that I have in me.

I'm glad I opened my eyes and realized that not everything is about dating. There are a lot of independent women out there and I want to be one of them. Love will find me I should just stop chasing after fake love. I deserve more than that.

It's just a matter of time.

Since the door is open MaShezi walks in with a basin.

She greets me with her most gorgeous smile and kneel in front of me and takes of my socks since I wasn't wearing any shoes. She reveals my swollen feet.

She puts them on the basin with warm water and starts washing them. She is saying something I guess praying if I'm not mistaken.

My feet feel much better after she's done. It's like her hands healed me.

She lotions them then puts on new socks.

I wonder what went wrong between us but she's a great woman with a big heart. My baby connects with her and she has this calm spirit surrounding her. One would expect her to be this bitter person because of the things people do to her but she is positive. That's what I like about her.

Me: "You're a life saver thank you very much"

MaShezi: "It's only a pleasure I know how pregnancy can be"

She takes the basin then attempts to walk out. I stop her

Me: "I'm sorry about what happened between us"

MaShezi: "Don't worry it's water under the bridge I forgive you"

Me: "Thank you"

She leaves. I've been meaning to apologise and now that I have I feel much lighter and my soul is at peace.

To be continued...

47

PEARL

After my lunch date I went home. Things have gotten really bad between me and my mother ever since the Hlomla drama.

After that text I knew it was Bakkie who organized someone to kill Hlomla. I would report him but I don't have evidence that points that indeed he's the one who indeed decided to play God on his life.

Everyone was really surprised at how I took Hlomla's death it's because we didn't spend much time together and we weren't in love as people would assume.

Every conversation with my mother ends up in a fight and it's a drag honestly. Going home is a mission.

I make an excuse to go out everyday so that I can be away from her.

I was also thinking of moving in permanently with Aphelele I just have to run the idea thru her and hear what she has to say cause I can't be dealing with this.

I enter the house and find her by the stove cooking. I just greet and pass her. She stops me..

I sigh...

Me: "Mom I don't want to fight"

Mom: "I didn't say I want to fight also. I'm just trying to help you baby"

Me: "Well then you're happy to find out it isn't working"

Mom: "You need to understand that you don't give yourself time to heal you came out from a relationship with Bakkie then you dated Hlomla then after Hlomla it didn't take much time and now you're here dating a girl! Baby you're only hurting yourself you don't give yourself time to heal and get over a certain relationship but you just jump into another one like you're in a competition"

Me: "You don't get to decide who I date and when! It's my feelings after all! Your opinion doesn't matter!!!"

Mom: "You know I'm trying here! To be a good parent to you! I've tried to show you the way and introduced God in your life but you decided to drop out. I wasn't forcing you I was trying to help you. I'm not directing how you should live your life. I'm just trying to make it simple for you"

Me: "Well don't bother! I think my life was better when you weren't around!"

She looks at me in shock.

Me: "I'm moving out also! I can't stand this"

Mom: "You know God is my witness that I've tried"

I go to my room and start packing. I'm scared to call Aphelele and tell her I'm coming. It will be best if I just show up unannounced so it will be easier for her not to kick me out.

After am done packing I take my suitcase, a bag and my toiletry bag. I took everything. I don't think I will come back here again! My mother is very toxic!

I find my mother with J.R in the kitchen.

J.R: "You're an adult. I think you know what you're doing if it's right for you or not so I'm not going to waste my time talking to someone who knows what they're doing. It's not too late though. You can still go back to your room and unpack"

Me: "I've made my decision"

J.R: "Very well"

Mom: "If you want to come by tomorrow we're having dinner with Bayandiswa"

I just decide to let her be because if I talk to her now it will make this conversation go on for a long time.

Me: "Okay then"

I take my bags then go out. At the gate I find MaMphuthi coming in. MaMphuthi is Hlomla's mother.

I greet her and she just stands and look at me. After a while she says...

Her: "We both know that your psycho you call a boyfriend is the one that costed me my son. Until then I'll never forgive you. I warned my son about you Jezebel! But he didn't listen to me! Look he's dead now! He left me just because he decided to love a heartless person like yourself!! You should have stayed where you are!"

Me: "I don't know who told you that but I won't agree nor disagree with you cause I don't know! You should stop blaming me for things I cannot control! I'm not God I don't give or take life! You should get closure and stop blaming me cause I didn't kill your son! I wasn't the one who decided that he should fall in love with me!"

She fixed her black skirt then looked at my bags. She spitted on the floor.

Her: "I curse you!! Do us all a favor and don't come back here!!"

She looked at me one more time then made her way into the house. I wonder what she wants.

I don't feel good about someone cursing me, it hurts.



I call a cab so it could take me to Aphelele's place....

APHELELE (PHEH)

'Damn'

'Love Or Lust'

'Damn'

'All of us'

'Give me a run for my money'

'There is nobody, no one to outrun me'

(Another world premier)

'So give me a run for my money'

'Sippin' bubbly, Feelin' Lovely'

'Livin' lovely'

'Just love me'

The music was blasting thru the speakers. I was drinking wine.

I don't know when did I start drinking alcohol but damn it tastes so good. The disadvantage of wine is that it makes very horny.

I know you will be surprised but I'm still a virgin. Since I'm the butch lesbian I'm mostly in charge when it comes to sex.

Tonight I just wanted someone to make love to me. Even if it's a guy but I've dedicated my feelings to girls so I'm not so sure about that but argh I'll be fine. It's just wine.

I'm looking at Mathapelo's pictures and ours. All the videos we've made. I won't lie I haven't moved on. It's hard cause I had already fallen deeply in love for her.

I don't love Pearl. I don't. She wasn't honest with me and I'm still angry at that. I just got back with her just to make Mathapelo jealous and I can see that she isn't moved by this.

She didn't block me on Whatsapp so I can still see her status and she could see mine. I've been posting Pearl lately to make her jealous but it isn't working out for me instead she's making me jealous seeing that she is able to live without me and I'm miserable without her.

I check her status and she posted a picture of her feet with a caption that says: "I didn't think I would say such but pregnancy suits me♥☐"

My phone rings and it's Pearl who's calling me...

Me: "Babe"

Her: "I'm outside"

Me: "You're joking right?"

Her: "No I'm not"

I hang up then go open the door. Indeed she's standing right there with her bags.

You've got to be kidding me!!

I let her in and she just rushes to me and hugs me while crying. I lead her to the lounge and we sit on the couch and she lays on my chest.

I get hold of the remote then lower the volume. The place is a mess but I don't care really. She's the one who came here without telling me.

My apartment isn't big. It has a bedroom, bathroom, kitchen then the lounge

and it's enough for me.

After she's done crying she looks at me.

Pearl: "I forgot my bags at the door"

Tjhoo the devil is testing me. I fetch the heavy bags and place them next to the couch then sit down and wait for an explanation.

Pearl: "For the past few weeks my mother has been ill treating me. It got so much that I decided to move out. I don't have anywhere else to go"

Oh wow. I cleared my throat.

Me: "I'm sorry to hear that babe"

Pearl: "Can I spend the night? I'll leave tomorrow and look for another place to stay"

Me: "Well that's fine by me you can spend the night"

Pearl: "Thank you babe I don't know what I'll do without you"

She hugs me. I roll my eyes. Who knew that someone I once loved and adored could become a nuisance in a short space of time.

I kiss her then start massaging her breasts. The wine messed me up real bad.

Pearl: "No babe. I'm not okay emotionally to have sex with you"

Me: "Tjhoo! Mxm!"

I stand up and take my bottle of wine then drink straight from it. Mathapelo has never denied me sex before!

Pearl is really frustrating!!

Me: 'I wanna be with you, ayy (just love me)

I wanna be with you (just love me, love)

I wanna be with you, ayy (love me) I wanna be with

I wanna be with you, (love me, just love me)'

I take the remote and increase the volume. I just love this song. It was Kendrick Lamar\_ Love....

I ignore her stares. It's getting late now. I'm guessing she's starting to feel hungry.

Me: "Oh and yeah when you start feeling hungry order food I didn't cook. You'll find me in bed"

I take my phone then go straight into my room. Argh I hate feeling this way.

I download porn then start masturbating. I laugh at myself because my girlfriend is here but she doesn't want to sleep with me. Wow!

She walks in as I'm about to reach my climax. She is surprised to see me masturbating. I don't pay attention to her but rather the lesbian porn I'm watching. When I'm done I undress.

She comes to me then starts to kiss me. I don't respond to the kiss I just look at her.

Me: "Wait I thought you weren't emotionally okay"

Pearl: "Now I am"

I push her off me.

Me: "You can't be serious!! When it suits you, you want to make love to me. I don't want to! You could see that I've reached my climax so don't bother yourself!!"

Pearl: "Oh wow!"

Me: "Yes wow. Now please excuse me I want to take a shower!"

Pearl thinks things will always go her way. Nah that won't happen. She's full of herself. I won't be her. When she decides she wants sex she just comes to me and expects me to just go with the flow. Nah it ain't happening. It doesn't go like that.

Argh what was I thinking!!? I'm so mad at myself right now.

I get under the shower and start showering.

BAKKIE

Well I must say I'm kind of nervous that I'm having dinner with the family tomorrow. I don't know what to expect but I don't want to get my hopes high for nothing.

Once my mother forgives me it will be smooth sailing from there. I won't lie I'm still a bit nervous but I'm sure I'll pull thru. I just need to get high so I won't be too nervous.

I'm waiting for Spider in my office. He's taking too long though.

He walks in after five minutes.

Me: "You took your sweet time"

Him: "I'm sorry I got held up".

Me: "Okay. So what's up?"

Him: "While working today some guy came over because he wanted a fix. He told me that since I've started on this business some other guy who's selling the cocaine isn't happy about me selling in his territory"

Me: "But I've asked around and nobody said anything about some guy whose selling cocaine as well"

Him: "I'm surprised myself"

Me: "Find the guy and tell him I would like to meet up with him. Who knows? Maybe we can become partners"

Him: "Okay boss, let me crawl"

He got out. Who is this man that is saying I'm selling in his territory? This is confusing....

Just as I'm still deep in my thoughts. My phone rings. It's my mother. Well not MaZwane nope... But the witch doctor KaMangethe...

Me: "Makhosi"

Her: "How is it going with the plan?"

Me: "It's coming very well. I just need to make sure that MaZwane trusts me first so that when we attack she doesn't get suspicious"

Her: "That's my boy. Update me after the dinner tomorrow".

Me: "I will don't worry"

I hang up and send her 2k.

For the past few weeks I looked for my mother and finally found her. I'm just glad that I found her.

MaZwane chose her daughter over me and I will also choose my mother over her. They are sisters but they hate each other because my mother stole Pearl and J.R from MaZwane. So since then MaZwane never found KaMangethe because after that she fled.

If MaZwane would found out that my mother is alive then it will mean jail for her because the police had been looking for her but because she uses muti they don't find her.

I'm working with her on our new plan I'm just hoping it doesn't backfire on us. We've worked too hard to get here.

I know it's wrong but nothing is right vele so who are we?

It's only a matter of time. It will be time soon....

To be continued...



48

THE FOLLOWING DAY

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

As always I wake up to go prepare breakfast for Menziwa. Today he won't leave early like usual so I didn't have to wake up early.

I was once untidy and dirty and didn't love myself much but after meeting Menziwa all of that changed.

He made me realize that no man loves a dirty and untidy woman so I had to change and also being lazy doesn't pay.

Today I'll be going to my doctor to get myself checked. We've been having a lot of unprotected sex with Menziwa I'm just hoping and praying that I caught something otherwise it will be the end of me for real.

My appointment is at 09:00 and now it's already 08:30 but I'm still at the house. I'm now ready and have prepared food for Menziwa. As per usual I pour the love portion and put the plastic next to the bread bin to go and fetch the spoon real quick.

Menziwa loves soft porridge so I decided to cook it for him. I put it on the tray then go to our house and give it to him.

He gives me the warmest smile that warms my heart for the rest of the day.

Menziwa: "Good morning MaNgcobo"

Me: "Morning my love"

Menziwa: "Thank you for the food Mkami"

Me: "It's always a pleasure my baby"

Menziwa: "And where are you off to so early in the morning?"

I take my bag.

Me: "I'm off to see my doctor"

Menziwa: "Okay babe. Which car are you going to take then?"

Me: "You know I can't drive so I'll catch a taxi"

Menziwa: "My poor baby but don't worry my love. Tomorrow I'm taking a day off just to spoil you"

My heart...

Me: "I'd love that Mageba"

Menziwa: "I'll tell one of the garden boys to drive you"

Me: "Thank you Thandolwami"

Menziwa: "Iyakuthanda indoda" (your man loves you)

Me: "Nami ngiyayithanda" (I love my man as well)

Menziwa: "You'll be late love"

Me: "Eat up as well. You'll need all your strength as you worked me up last night"

Menziwa: (chuckles) "Okay babe"

I walk out closing the door behind me.

As per agreement one of the garden boys really took me to the doctor. I'm now waiting for the doctor to come back with my test results.

We done tests last week so now the tests are coming back. I don't know what to expect but I'm praying I get pregnant I can't imagine disappointing myself like that.

After a long 15 minutes the doctor walks back in.

Her heels that keep clicking on the floor make me more nervous.

Dr. Jali: "Miss Ngcobo"

Me: "It's Mrs Zulu now"

Dr Jali: "Oh wow congratulations"

I fake a smile. I desperately want her to continue now and stop playing around.

Me: "Thank you Huns"

Dr. Jali: "Well let me get straight to business"

Me: "Yes of course"

Dr. Jali: "Unfortunately you're too old to have babies now it's too risky. You can even lose your own life"

Me: "But Doc am I not pregnant?"

Dr. Jali: "I'm really Mrs Zulu but you're not pregnant"

My whole mood drops. I was really hoping that I'm pregnant.

Dr. Jali: "But you can still adopt there are a lot of kids that...."

I don't wait for her to finish I just leave her like that taking my bag with me.

Since I'm covered with Menziwa's medical aid I don't bother paying.

When I get to the car I don't waste time I just cry my eye balls out. Why does this have to happen to me? I don't get it honestly.

Mathapelo is going to have a baby but I'm not! That's just not fair. The sad thing it's that it's too late for her to abort but wait.... Nobody said it's too late for her to miscarry..

You're so smart MaNgcobo. I just have to make Mathapelo miscarry and she will be out of our lives for good!

Now who's laughing?

My phone rings from my bag disturbing me from my evil plan. I quickly wipe my tears and compose myself. It's Menziwa..

Me: "Babe"

Menziwa: "Awuze Ekhaya Manje!" (Come home now!)

Me: "What's wrong?"

Menziwa: "Kuncono Ukube ungibuza loko usulana!" (It would be better if you ask me that while you're here)

After that he drops the call. I'm left stunned.

Well what just happened? Maybe that hippo told Menziwa I wore perfume in her presence. Mxm!

Me: "I'm done take me home"

I tell the garden boy who drove me here. I'm sitting at the back and the poor boy has been looking me thru the mirror. I guess he was wondering what was wrong to him but I'm glad he didn't ask anything stupid because I would have insulted his poor ass!

I wonder what's so important that requires my presence....

MENZIWA ZULU

I was really angry! No I wasn't angry maybe but I was fuming!  
How dare Makhosazane bewitch me! The nerve of that woman!  
She can kill a person!

As I was enjoying my soft porridge my mother called out to me  
to come and see this. There was a plastic with some muti  
inside. I've never been so angry in my life! My mother found it  
next to the bread bin.

Now it all makes sense why the sudden love I had for her! I've  
never loved Makhosazane! This came to me as a surprise  
indeed.

After vomiting with holy water from my mother's church I felt  
much better and lighter. Everything came out. After that my  
mother prayed for me. One would expect that I would forget  
what happened but I didn't. I remembered everything and all  
the wrong things I did.

I was the only one who seemed to be surprised by this whole  
thing because everyone wasn't surprised as I was.

I asked the maid to pack up all her belongings in refuse bags  
and put them outside.

We were now all waiting for her at the main house. Everyone  
was seated I couldn't sit down! My anger didn't let me.

At last she finally arrived. Seeing her made me want to puke.  
She's a disgrace to woman kind to be honest!

Before she could say anything I slapped her twice. She looked at me shocked. I looked at her straight into her eyes...

Me: "You know what you did so I won't waste my time explaining everything to you. You're so pathetic!! How could you use love portion to someone's husband! You're such a disgrace!! Love portion runs out but love doesn't! Think about that next time! You're a disgrace to woman kind!! What a mother that you are!! No wonder Menzi molested your child it's because you are not emotionally there for your children! You're self centered!! If Aphelele had to choose a mother I know it wouldn't be you!! I wouldn't wife you any day in my life! Nobody will! Well unless of course you use love portion on them like you did to me! I don't ever want to see you ever again! Even if there's a ceremony in here! You can keep the surname though.. it's the only thing you have left anyway! Your clothes are outside! You can leave my house now!!"

After saying that I went and knelt down in front of MaShezi...

Me: "Mawezingane... Thembalami... I'm really sorry my love. I know I've said it a lot of times before but this time I really mean it. Ntombi ka Dlaba.. the love you give me is without a doubt. I've never met a woman like you and in my lifetime I doubt I will. Thank you for everything babe... You constantly forgiving me. Thank you for raising my kids. Thank you for taking care of me. Thank you for always being there for me, being loyal and

staying when you weren't supposed to. For that I'm forever grateful. I know what love is because of you. Please forgive me. It won't happen again. No woman will go above and below you ever again. It will be you and I forever"

I was looking at her beautiful eyes, my wife is beautiful no lie. I almost lost her.

MaShezi: "Do you promise?"

Me: "I promise my love"

MaShezi: "I forgive you"

Me: "Thank you so much my love you won't regret it"

MaShezi: "Let's hope so"

Me: "I love you"

MaShezi: "I love you too"

I stood up and kissed her forehead.

When I looked at where Makhosazane was standing she was nowhere to be seen. I hope she got the message and left. I'm not in the mood.

Mam'Zulu: "Menziwa let it be the last time a woman play you like that ever again! MaShezi really loves you"

Me: "I'll do that"



Mathapelo cleared her throat and stood up. Even though it was a bit difficult but she managed. My heart started beating fast.

Mathapelo: "I've decided after Khuselo is born I will go back to school. I was asking MaShezi to be a mother to Khuselo when I'm gone... It will really mean a lot"

MaShezi got of me and went to help Mathapelo sit down.

MaShezi: "I would love to"

My heart melted. Indeed my wife has a big heart. Not everyone would do what she did. I really admire her for that.

I don't want to hurt my wife anymore so I decided to let Mathapelo go it's for the best to be honest. She doesn't deserve this. I'm just glad she wants to go and study. I applaud her for that. I'm really proud..

It seems like everything is finally coming together in my life. I just hope this smooth sailing won't come to an end real soon...

But when it comes to an end I would die a happy man...

BAKKIE

The sun has set. I was now preparing myself for the dinner.

I felt really nervous I won't lie. I didn't know what to expect.

It's been a while since something made me this nervous. It was really surprising.

I kept looking at my watch. I don't want to be late. It seems like Spider was taking too long to arrive.

I kept tapping my foot on the floor. I was waiting for him in the kitchen.

I wasn't wearing something fancy just a jean, t-shirt and a jacket. It was all black. Oh not forgetting black sneakers as well.

After a long 10 minutes Spider arrived. At least I won't be late since the drive is approximately 25 minutes.

I didn't talk to him I just got into the car and we drove off.

Arriving at my family house I felt somehow at peace. I felt that everything will be okay. Spider drove off. I will call him when I'm done.

I walked in and knocked on the door.

Some boy opened the door. He looked 16/17 years if I'm not mistaken.

Me: "Good evening"

Him: "Good evening you must be Bakkie. I'm J.R the last born"

Me: "Oh I see"

He opened the door. I walked in and he led me to the living room. This house has really changed I won't lie.

My mother stood up and gave me a hug. Her hug brought a lot of memories. Some bitter some good, but I felt at peace. I felt like everything will be okay. Everything will be fine.

She brushed my back. Like she used to when I was young.

I didn't help but I just cried out loud. Even the strongest man has his weakest time and for me it's this moment.

I missed her. I missed this moment with her.

After I've settled down we both sat down on the couch. I suddenly felt guilty. Of all the things I was planning to do to this woman who would do anything for me. How heartless can I be?!

You know what I'm stopping all of this nonsense. My mother's plans, my obsession for Pearl

Advertisement

the drugs and everything that's was against my mother. This woman raised me when my mother wasn't there.

MaZwane: "I forgive you my baby. I know"

Me: "You don't understand. I've done things that can make you hate me forever. You can't just forgive me"

MaZwane: "I know but God forgives us each and every day no matter how big and small our sins are so how am I to judge or

hold grudges on you? I won't . I know how it feels. I'm sorry I wasn't there for you when you lost the baby, when you were obsessed with Pearl, when you reunited with your mother and when you were doing things you weren't supposed to... I'm sorry baby"

I just decided to tell her everything, about the killing, the plan I had with my mother, my dark obsession, the drugs and most importantly THE MAN IN ME.

To my surprise she didn't judge me nor look at me another way she just assured me that everything is going to be fine.

And to my surprise I believed her when she said that.

Everything is going to be fine...

To be continued...

## TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

To say I'm shocked would be an understatement. I'm terrified. Well yeah I have killed someone before but seeing Jason kill his wife like that left me stunned.

It turns out he also knows that I killed my stepfather, he knows that I was molested... You can say he knows everything about me. Well except witchcraft. This guy really did his research.

He blackmailed me by saying if I don't help him with disposing the body he will hand me over to the police.

One would ask if he has evidence.... Well he does. I don't know how he did it but I saw the evidence with my own two eyes and I could do life in jail together with my mother.

When Jason killed Bella I was convinced that indeed he's heartless. More than you can think. Can you believe that we're back together? Oh yes....

After all the sacrifices he made he just couldn't forget about me. Since Bella is now out of the way our life is peaceful. His words not mine of course.

Yesterday we buried Bella on the floor. In the living room we removed some wood that is covering the floor and put her inside. I'm just praying that she doesn't start to smell but Jason

doesn't think though. Bella will rot obviously but I'll just let him be he's the man of the house alright! I'm just his wife ....

I guess his maids know who he is and what he does because when he requested the bedroom to be clean no questions were asked. I hope they won't sell him out.

It's been hard I won't lie, I can barely sleep at night. I lost my baby as well. My heir. Maybe it was the only baby I would ever had. I could still hear her screams and the gun.

I even sleep with sleeping pills these days cause I can't do it on my own.

Jason said it will give me problems since it's still new. He was suggesting a therapist but I fear those since I got a lot of problems that are weighing on my shoulders, I can't speak to someone. I fear judgement.

Some would say speak to your mother... But my mother is MaNgcobo so yeah I guess you now know how she is.

Speaking of her I haven't talked to her since our fight. It's so unlike her to be quite for this long but maybe her marriage is keeping her busy.

My phone rings. Talk about coincidence it's her calling me. I answer.

Me: "MaNgcobo"

MaNgcobo: "Where are you?!"

I swear I heard her sniffing. My heart breaks. She's still my mother so that's normal.

Me: "What's wrong?"

MaNgcobo: "Please come home"

Me: "Okay I'm on my way"

I hung up. I call Jason, he answers on a third ring.

Jason: "Babe"

Me: "Yeah listen my mother needs me so I'm headed back home I don't know if I'll come back or not but I'll update you"

Jason: "Okay then"

Me: "Bye"

Jason: "You're not supposed to say that"

Me: "I love you"

Jason: "I love you more bubu"

After that he hangs up. I said I love you thru gritted teeth. I don't love that man! Well not anymore!

I pack some things then head home with one of Jason's car. I'm the wife so why not?

I drive and find her outside the gate with her bags.

Oh MaNgcobo! What is it now?...

PEARL

I thought I made the right decision when giving this relationship thing a chance but I was wrong. This thing is a scam tjhoo!!

Right now I'm left all alone and Aphelele has went to her work. I don't know what she does but I know she's out her trying to make ends meet.

I don't think I want to work or study. I just want to be taken care of. I'm a queen I deserve all the love and the money in the world.

As a guy in this relationship she must provide. I won't be able to work

Advertisement

that's just not who I am.

Today she wasn't talking to me I figured she's still angry at me but who cares I won't beg her shame! Definitely not me!!



I take my phone so I could call her. It rings for a while then she answers.

Me: "Babe"

Pheh: "Yeah?"

Me: "Could you please transfer R150 to my account I'm starving and I can't see anything I can eat in here"

Pheh: "You're still in my flat? I thought you were calling to tell me where you left the key"

Me: "Umhh... No. I haven't left"

Pheh: "I can see that and why haven't you left exactly?"

I gasp in shock.

Me: "Babe how could you say that!!?"

Pheh: "Ukuthi nawe unesdina maan!" (You're a nuisance!)

Me: "Aphelele! How could you say that about me! I'm your girlfriend for crying out loud!!"

Pheh: "Yeah that. Listen I'm busy at work my boss is coming today so yeah. I would really appreciate it if I don't find you there when I come back"

Me: (sniffing) "I love you"

Pheh: "Cheers!"

After that she drops the call. Oh wow! What was that all about?! Aphelele is testing me yazi!

I'm not going anywhere! I'm her partner! We should have each other's backs always! Maybe she's under a lot of pressure at work since her boss is coming. She didn't mean that right? No she didn't! Aphelele loves me to the moon and back... To infinity and beyond.

I just need to cheer her up. I start cleaning the house. Halfway through my phone disturbs me. I answer it cause it's an unsaved number...

Me: "Hello"

Voice: "Hey Pearl"

My throat immediately dries up.

Me: "Bakkie?"

Him: "Yes it's me"

Me: "What do you want!!?"

I start breathing heavily...

Him: "Please don't hung up. I just want to apologize"

Me: (laughing) "Oh wow it's like the devil wants to apologize"

Him: "Yeah it doesn't matter if you forgive me or not but I would have apologized. Sorry doesn't match the pain and tears that I've caused you for that I'm sorry. It may seem like a joke but it's the truth. MaZwane showed me the way. I'm not perfect but I'm worth it. I'm alive I deserve it. I've been praying and I ain't playing. I've asked forgiveness to my mother and God himself and now I'm asking forgiveness from you. I'm sorry. I will never ever bother you again. I'm done with this criminal and obsessed life I was living. Now I'm living for the Lord. Some will mock and laugh at me but all of that doesn't matter cause I know he's with me. Again I'm sorry Pearl I hope you find it in your heart to forgive me. You can now stop living in fear. You can now live your life freely I'm no longer out to get you anymore. I'll even stop sending you money cause it will be like I'm buying your forgiveness while I'm not. When you finally decide to come home you know where home is. Take care of yourself. I love you cuz"

After that he hung up. For good 5 minutes I stood there not knowing if I heard right or I'm hallucinating. Bakkie is asking for forgiveness? Wow!

If he was acting then he's really good at it, but his voice said otherwise. He was calm. Not your usual intimidating. A part of me believes him because know how my mother can be. She's a real hero but not to me anyway.

I wish he didn't say he will stop sending money because I really need it to be honest. Also my pride won't let me ask for help I don't need them in my life. I'm doing just fine without them.

Call me weird but I really enjoyed it when he was still chasing after me but now since he's a good guy now and my cousin that will never happen. I just have to make peace with it. It's over. I just have Aphelele to deal with now.

I continue cleaning so I could prepare a romantic dinner for us... Aphelele is so going to love this I'm telling you...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Bathing is a real mission I'm telling you. If I wasn't going anywhere I would stay like this and not bath.

I'm two months pregnant but my tummy is so big you could swear Khuselo is a twin with someone.

Woah wait! What if she's a twin? What am I going to do vele? I'm just thinking.. that can't be true! I'm just carrying one baby. Yes just one not two or three or even four.

After I finish bathing I struggle finding something to wear. Everything is appearing to be too tight now! Is this normal? If it's normal then I don't like it! Period!!

I settle for a green summer dress. I love it because it isn't too tight. It's perfect. I don't bother wearing an underwear.

To whom it may concern... When you made the theory that said pregnant women don't wear undies well congratulations you know us too well shame. That thing is a nuisance since I pee all the time. Peeing is also a pandemic on its own!!

I take my bag and head to the main house.

I find MaShezi on the stove. Mam' Zulu went to her stokvel meeting.

Me: "Babe"

MaShezi: "Mawabo"

Me: "Why are you saying Mawabo... It's only one child in here"

MaShezi: "Keep telling yourself that"

Me: "What do you mean?"

MaShezi: "It's not clear right now but I see four heads"

Me: "Whhhhaaaatttt!! You're joking right?"

MaShezi: "No I'm not"

Me: "I wonder where are they going to come out"

MaShezi: "Where they went in"

She said that without looking at me. I couldn't help it I just cried. MaShezi just looked at me and started laughing out loud. I just cried even more. She stopped laughing and came to me. She hugged me tight. That's what I needed.

MaShezi: "You're such a drama queen you know that?"

Me: "I hate hormones"

MaShezi: "They're just getting started"

Me: "Mxm"

MaShezi: "Have you ate?"

Me: "No. I'll get something on the way"

MaShezi: "Okay then"

Me: "Remember not to tell anyone our little secret"

MaShezi: (laughing) "I know hawu. Just get out of here already"

Me: "Thanks bye I love you"

MaShezi: "Says someone who's carrying four babies"

Me: "We love you, all five of us"

MaShezi: "And I love you all so much"

Me: "Bye!"

I ask the garden boy to drive me to where my car wash is. Yes you heard that right.

I have my own car wash it's still struggling but it will pick up eventually. I know it will.

The money Bakkie promised to send every month when I left "the house" until I stand on my feet? Still remember it? Yes I've been saving it ever since and decided to open a car wash.

It's a secret cause I know Menziwa would want to help so it's only me and MaShezi who knows. I told her because she was asking too many questions.

I've got two boys working for me. Recently the manager also hired someone since it was starting to get busy. I heard it's a girl which is really surprising. I'm guessing she didn't have any other option.

I check out the business once a week. I used to check it three times but now I'm just too tired you know.

When I arrive it's busy. I can see it's picking up. There are many people coming here. I might just consider opening a pub and grill but not now though. When I've gotten rid of these rascals first out of my tummy thank you very much.

I've learnt independency so that when they all stop providing for me I won't be left high and dry. I know Menziwa would

never do that but to be on the safe side I'll continue running my business.

Everyone is running up and down and they don't notice me, but I do notice Aphelele washing a car, Mercedes C300 coupe. She seems to be laughing at some joke the client said. It's a woman.

For once I don't feel jealous. Meaning I'm over her. After she's done washing the car I call her over. She is surprised to see me. Well I'm surprised to see her as well. I didn't know she was working for me.

Pheh: (chuckles) "We know you're pregnant but you can't wear sleepers all the time"

I look at my feet. Wow! How did I forget to take these shoes off. Wow I'm really embarrassed right now.

Me: "I... Umhhh... I find them very comfortable"

Pheh: (laughing) "oh wow. You forgot to take them off didn't you?"

Me: "Well I...."

She just laughs at me. I want to cry so bad but I just hold it in. I won't let hormones rule me. I'm a big girl.

Pheh: "Look I'll like to chat but my boss is coming and I don't want him to find me talking to you. Not in a bad way though"



Oh she doesn't know.

Me: "It's actually a her"

Pheh: "Wait what? Do you know her?"

Me: "It's actually me"

Pheh: (chuckles) "you're joking right?"

Me: "No I'm not"

She looks at me with a blank expression. I guess she wasn't expecting that.

Pheh: "Oh wow I didn't know you owned the place"

Me: "Yeah"

Michael comes to us. He's the manager.

Michael: "Boss lady"

Me: "Manager"

Michael: "She's new. That's Aphelele. Don't worry about her... She is doing just fine"

Me: "We've met. And I trust her don't worry Michael"

Michael: "Sho boss lady"

He goes back inside.

Pheh: "Wow!"

Me: "I'd love to chat but I got to go and see what Michael has to show me"

Pheh: "Yeah of course"

I turn around and start walking away. Pheh calls after me.

Pheh: "PELO!"

Me: "Umhh... Yes"

Pheh: "You look good. Pregnancy is treating you well"

Me: "Thanks"

Pheh: "Oh and... It was nice seeing you"

Me: "Yeah me too"

I walk inside. Well that's got to be the most awkward moment of my life. I quickly compose myself and continue walking inside with my pink sleepers.

Wow....

To be continued....

50

APHELELE (PHEH)

You know when you try to hurt someone you end up hurting yourself...

I am a witness of that. I've tried many times to hurt Mathapelo but guess who got hurt? I did. When I was busy chasing after fake love she was busy chasing money. Life is unpredictable.

After she left I was left dumbfounded. Who knew that one day I would work for my ex? Nobody.

Where is my mother when I need her the most? Why did my father leave me? I try to remain strong but I am dying inside.. No one is here to save me. I learnt to be independent at a young age.

I don't think anyone cares about me or what happens to me.

At my lunch break I received a call from Mam'Zulu. I wasn't expecting that. It's been long since I last talked to her.

I answered..

Me: "Grandma"

Mam'Zulu: "Baphelele"

Me: "I thought you hated me"

Mam'Zulu: "I would never hate you my baby. I just didn't like the things that you were doing"

Me: "I know and I'm sorry for that. I really disappointed you"

Mam'Zulu: "We all make mistakes. I wasn't expecting you to be perfect. You're human after all... I'm glad if you're apologizing it indicates that you regret what you did"

I swallowed.

Me: "Yes I do"

Mam'Zulu: "I forgive you my baby. How about we start afresh?"

Me: "I would really love that"

Mam'Zulu: "I'm glad you do. I know you love your own space but please do visit. If you feel like it's getting too much you're welcome to come home to your family"

Me: "Thank you Gogo"

Mam'Zulu: "Okay... I love you baby"

Me: "I love you too"

Mam'Zulu: "Don't ever forget that"

Me: "I won't"

Mam'Zulu: "Okay bye"

Me: "Bye"

I hung up.

I felt a sense of relief. I needed to hear that. To hear that someone actually cares about me. Not everyone has turned their backs on me.

I don't think I want to be in a relationship anymore. Pearl is a lot of work to be honest. I just need to find a way to breakup with her. I know she will cause unnecessary fights with me but I can't do this anymore... It's all too much.

I just need to finalize applying. Next year I'm moving down to KZN. It's for my own sanity. I need to find who is Aphelele.

My life won't go anywhere if I'm still surrounded by all of this. I don't want to be depressed just because my mother doesn't love me.

I continue eating my sandwich and go to wash another car.

Michael comes up to me... He's a flirt, and he's been asking me out without giving up. I'm wondering what goes on in his head cause I told him that I'm not into boys but does he listen? No he doesn't.

He was adopted by a white couple hence the name Michael. He's actually black. His other name is Mpumulo. He's a funny and cute guy. Argh! I can't believe I said that.

Michael: "You look like you will hit me when we get married"

I laughed out loud.

Me: "I won't hit you"

Michael: (laughing) "So you will marry me?"

Me: "No I won't! I told you I'm-"

Michael: "Yes I know.. lesbian you told me"

Me: "I thought you have forgotten"

Michael: "No I haven't. I really love you MaZulu"

Me: "And I don't"

Michael: "I don't think you're sure about that"

Me: "I'm... I'm sure"

Michael: "Oh wow I'm hurt!"

He put his hand on his chest. I couldn't help but laugh.

Michael: "You have a contagious laugh you know"

I blushed.

Me: "Thank you"

Michael: "With the figure you have your wedding dress you will look breathtaking"

I looked at it. I never thought about marriage. Let alone dating a guy.

Me: "But sadly I won't wear it"

Michael: "Oh you will. On our wedding"

Me: "Can I continue working?"

Michael: "Of course"

Me: "Thank you"

Michael: "Oh and Aphelele... When the time is right everything will fall into place. Don't stress. God has plans for you... Big plans"

Me: "Thank you. I needed to hear that"

Michael: "And marrying me are part of those big plans"

Me: "Get out of here!"

I took a wet sponge then threw it at him. He ran away..

Michael can be silly at times.

I'm just hoping that I won't find Pearl in my flat tonight.. I don't want any trouble...

I continue washing the car....

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

After a good one hour Tebogo came to my rescue and opened up for me.

I was really tired. He walked up to me.

Tebogo: "Mah"

Me: "Why isn't anyone living in here?"

Tebogo: "Please don't start! I'm not in the mood"

Me: "Oh wow! I'm still your mother Tebogo!"

Tebogo: "Listen here! You don't get to tell me what goes and what doesn't! I lost respect for you the day you used love portion to a person who didn't care about you... I don't want to get started on the love part. You don't care mama! You never did!! I'm starting to wonder why did I do to deserve a mother like you! You left me and married. Now all of a sudden you come back with your bags and come shout at me! It's not my fault that your portion ran out or that they finally found out all your dirty plans! I wasn't there in the first place! You never loved me mother! If you did you would know that something was wrong with me when your husband dearest raped me! I'm in pain!! There are a lot of things that I'm dealing with currently and nobody cares! What a mother that you are!! I don't even want to get started on Aphelele! She's been thru a lot just because of us! You would swear she's not your child

because you treat her like dirt!"



My heart broke again. I didn't know that my son was this broken. He has never voiced out his feelings before... Even when we killed Menzi Zulu. He just kept quite.

I didn't think he is this vulnerable. I just thought everything is okay. I just thought that since we killed Menzi he will find closure and be okay but I was wrong. He is right I don't deserve to be a mother. Menziwa was right after all.

He opens the gate and we walk in. I take my bags with me. He doesn't bother helping me with them. He opens the door and dust welcomes us.

He leaves the door open then opens the windows as well.

I head to my room so I could pack my clothes back into their rightful places. I didn't think I would come back here after I've worked hard to get out. My happily ever after lasted for only two minutes... It's just not fair..

I sigh... thinking about what I need to do next. I tried love potion but it didn't work out for me. I'm out of options. Wait! I'm not out of options yet... There's still one option left and that is MISCARRIAGE.

I'm smart you know. I just need something strong. She will regret the day she came and took my happiness from me!! If it wasn't for Mathapelo my husband would still be very much in love with me. Well yeah sure I got defeated but I'm not backing down without a fight!! I'm not going back with Menziwa but at least we would feel the pain that I felt...

All I need now is a plan that will make me be close to her...

I'll see Tebogo and Aphelele when I'm done this is more important than anything else in my life right now. I change my clothes and put on something that I'm comfortable in.

I get out of my room so I can start cleaning the house. I head to the kitchen and find Tebogo drinking water...

Tebogo: "Has your husband found anything about his twin brother who was your husband as well?"

Me: "No he hasn't"

Tebogo: "That's good then. Is the envelope still in a good place?"

I think for a while...

Me: "Yeah sure"

I lie thru gritted teeth. I don't want him worrying about anything.

Tebogo: "Okay then. I'm out to get something for us to eat"

Me: "Okay I'll start cleaning"

Tebogo: "Oh wow that's a first. You should get married so more because I can see it's changing you for better"

Me: "I'm not that bad you know"

Tebogo: "Yeah right! Let me go"

He left. I looked around the house. The dust was everywhere.

Come to think of it I don't know when was the last time I saw the envelope... That envelope could send us to jail because it has everything linking us to the death of Menzi Zulu. I don't know how but I need to get my hands on it! Menziwa is so unpredictable...

He could be thinking of researching more about his twin brother's death as we speak and that is not good at all.

I drop the broom and go outside behind Tebogo's flat to visit my husband's grave. It's not your usual grave but I know he's here. I kneel in front of it. Tears fill up my eyes and I'm out of words. I don't what I'm going to say. I wipe them quickly and just kneel there.

Someone clears their throat behind me and I turn to find my neighbor looking at me intensively...

Me: "Sorry I didn't see you"

Her: "Looks like this place really means a lot to your family"

That confused me.

Me: "What do you mean?".

Her: "Well I was looking for you the other day and some man was kneeling in the same spot"

Me: "What man?!"

Her: "I don't know but he kind of looked like your husband Menzi"

Me: "Where was I?"

Her: "He said something about a family gathering or ceremony"

Me: "Oh now I remember!"

Her: "You didn't tell me he had a twin brother"

Me: "I didn't think it was important. Don't mind us. This is our praying place"

Her: "I see"

That means Menziwa came here before. I wonder what made him come here... It can't be coincidence. Cause I know that Tebogo wouldn't tell a soul.

Well now that explains everything... It explains how he found the envelope. That sly fox!!

I fake a smile to this woman.

Me: "Let's go inside I was done anyway"

We walked back to the house...

MENZIWA ZULU

I've went out to the police station so I could hand in everything that I know of to the police.

Later on tomorrow we will head down to see a witch doctor that will make everyone who had a hand in my brother's disappearance go crazy. I'm against this but what can I say? My mother wants things that way so I'll just let her be. If she wants closure that way then I'll do anything for her to get it .. even if it means doing things that I'm totally against.

I keep on taping my foot in this office. I've been here for a while now and someone told me that the Constable is on his way.

I look around the office and it's busy as it should be.. There are pictures of suspects on the board. Police do a lot of work I don't think I'll manage to be honest.

He finally walks in with documents on his hands. He gives me a handshake..

Constable: "I'm Constable Dhlomo"

Me: "Menziwa Zulu"

He lets go of my hand then sits down. He looks me straight in my eyes...

Him: "How can I help you today?"

Me: "I'm here to reopen a missing person's case that was closed"

Him: "Oh okay. Who's that person?"

Me: "My twin brother, Menzi Zulu"

Him: "I see... And for how long has he's been missing for?"

Me: "Twenty years"

Him: "Wow that's a long time"

Me: "Yes but I'm doing it for my mother. She's very restless"

Him: "I could tell... Anything or information that could help us?"

Me: "Well I do have this envelope I found in his wife's wardrobe. And also there's something I can't understand here... It is said that Tebogo was the last person who saw him... What happened?"

Him: "I'm sorry but who's Tebogo?"

Me: "You'll find out on the envelope Constable"

Him: "Okay then... I promise you we will find who did this!"

Me: "And also I think there was something weird that I found behind a flat in their home"

Him: "Something like what?"

Me: "I don't know but to me it looked like a grave or something"

He thought for a while.

Him: "That's some interesting information you got there. But don't worry after I read what's on this envelope I'll be in touch with you and let you know what's happening"

Me: "Thank you Constable"

Him: "Here's a piece of paper write your numbers in here"

I took the paper and wrote my numbers. I then said my goodbyes and left.

Bit by bit I will find what exactly happened to my brother. Even if it takes years I don't care. They do say a case doesn't rot.

I take my car then drive to Woolies getting all my wife's favorites and I go home.

After parking I go to her house and find her in bed reading a book. She takes off her glasses and comes to hug me. I really missed coming home to this. It feels so good and just right!

After a while she lets go and look me in the eyes. I kiss her lips. I was missing her so bad!

Me: "I love you wife"

Her: "I love you too my husband"

Me: "Again I'm sorry my love"

Her: "It's okay I said I forgive you"

Me: "I know but I can't help and feel bad"

Her: "I know but it won't help me if I become angry because it happened. What's more important is that you realized your wrongs. You're human after all I don't expect you to be perfect so don't fake perfection but that also doesn't mean that I should watch you break my heart intentionally"

I look at her... I'm so lucky to have someone like her in my life.

Me: "I don't know what I'd do without you. Thank you babe. I won't mess up again I promise"

Her: "Then we're good"

Me: "Kiss me"

She kissed me while standing on her tiptoes.

I started rubbing her nipples and she moaned in my mouth.

Wow I missed that...



I take off her t-shirt while continuing with kissing her. What I love about my wife is that she's a really good kisser...

I continue undressing her ....

To be continued...

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

BAKKIE

"The beautiful thing about choosing Christ is that, once you have chosen Him, He no longer holds your past against you. As humans we are so quick to remind others of past faults. We "forgive" but we don't "forget". We "bury the hatchet" but leave the handle sticking out. We fight with our spouses and bring ten-year-old mistakes. Thanks be to God that He doesn't work like that. In Christ we are new creatures. There is no "condemnation". In fact many Christians have a more difficult time forgiving themselves than God ever had. If God is so quick to forgive us and if he holds condemnation toward us who are to condemn ourselves or others?"

I was listening that preaching in the radio. I was on my way to my house to meet up with Spider. I called a cab and asked the driver to open this particular radio station that talks about Christ and surprisingly enough he obeyed and opened it.

Today they were talking about forgiveness. This is no coincidence... It's just meant to be.

I won't lie I didn't know there's life other than falling in love, crime and drugs. Now I'm a born again Christian. I know it's hard to believe but it is what it is. Since I also asked for forgiveness from Pearl I felt much lighter and at peace.

It doesn't matter if she forgave me or not but what's important is that I asked for forgiveness. That's my mother's words.

I take out my phone and block KaMangethe's numbers and also deleting them in the process and also the messages. I'm done with everything that's got to do with evil.

'No weapon formed against me shall prosper'

I pay then get out of the car heading to my house. I open the door and find my maids going up and down preparing some dinner in the kitchen.

Me: "Good evening"

They look at me surprised. That's because I don't greet.

Them: "Good evening Sir"

Me: "I can see you've prepared dinner. Just dish up for the man upstairs then the rest you can go eat it in your cottages"

Them: "Thank you Sir"

They bowed a little.

Me: "Please call me Bayandiswa and stop bowing down I'm not a king.. the Lord is your king"

I leave them shocked like that and head to my study. I find Spider drinking Hennessy. I sit on my chair then look at him. He

poured another glass of Hennessy. He handed it to me. I was tempted but I can't let temptations get the better of me.

Me: "No I'm good"

He placed the glass down.

Spider: "Wow that's a first, you've never declined alcohol before, especially Hennessy"

Me: "I know but that's not the reason why I called you here"

Spider: "I'm all ears then"

Me: "I'm giving you the drug business it's all yours"

Spider: "What?!"

He stood up from the chair.

Me: "You've been with me for years now. You deserve it. I don't want anything even a single cent from it. It's all yours"

Spider: "Oh wow. I can't believe this man! Thank you very much!"

I stood up and we bumped shoulders.

Spider: "I won't be a stranger then"

Me: "Don't be"

He took his keys then left.

I'm making progress. What I need to do now is sell this big house then find a job. I will go and live with my mother. The money I will get from this house I'll provide with it. It will do me good since I earned it by all the bad things.

I was thinking of fetching the girls I sold to Jason but thinking how brutal he is I might not come back. I'll just leave things like that.

Who knew I would be Christian one day?

Thanks my mother. I now know the right way to live. I know it's not an easy process and there will be challenges along the way but with God by my side no challenge is big nor small.

Faith. That's all I need to have ....

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

Intense silence filled the room as we ate pizza. I honestly didn't know what to say to this woman in front of me. The woman I call my mother...

Me: "So what brought you back here?"

She cleared her throat.

Her: "They found the love portion"

Me: "Mhmm that's nice"

Her: "Don't act like a saint here. You also bewitched my daughter"

Me: "And I blame you for that! If I didn't have this much anger buried inside of me I wouldn't have bewitched your daughter!! If you payed attention to my feelings you would have known that I'm dying inside!!"

Every conversation turns into a fight with this woman!

Her: "We have much more bigger problems than witchcraft right now"

Me: "What are those problems?"

Her: "Menziwa has the envelope and when we were at the Zulu resident he came here and took it. According to our neighbor he was behind your flat and looking at where we buried Menzi"

My heart started beating fast. On no! This can't be happening!! I can't go to jail!!

Me: "Why did you lie to me!?"

Her: "I... I was scared to tell you..."

Me: "Wow!! We're screwed!!"

I placed the plate on the table and went outside to get some fresh air.

When I thought I was dealing with my problems the right way this happens! I'm going to jail!! I shed a few tears. This can't be happening to me! I can't go to jail.

My phone vibrates in my pocket. I take it out to find an incoming call from Jason.

I know better than to not answer the call so I have no choice but to answer the call.

Me: "Hello"

Jason: "You know when I first laid my eyes on you I thought you were this innocent person but no you're the devil himself!"

Me: "And what makes you say that?"

Jason: "For a smart person like you you're really slow you know. I thought you would have known me by now. I've put bugs on your phone so I know everything. How you and your mother killed your stepfather and where you actually buried him!"

Me: "I thought you had already knew that"

Jason: "Oh trust me I did. I just wasn't so sure but now I know everything and I have evidence. At first I didn't have any evidence now I do"

Me: "I guess now we're even"

Jason: "You're with me for life! Don't think about cheating me cause I'll find out and you will sleep in a cold jail cell"

Me: "Okay"

Jason: "And Tebogo... I'm watching you son! I've lost much for you"

Me: "I know"

Jason: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more"

Jason: "Enjoy your stay with your mother. I'll be in touch"

Me: "Bye"

Oh wow this is nice. Once upon a time I was a bartender and had nothing to worry about and now I feel threatened. I'm afraid to do anything.

Jason having evidence is what shatters my soul the most. This is the hardest thing I have to deal with. Now how do one get out of a sticky situation like this?! I just lost my child but who cares about that? No one does! Now I'm forced to be in a relationship with him even though I don't want to anymore.

I'll just have to stick around. I don't have no choice.

After a few more breathing exercises I go back inside.

I just have to take life as it is...



PEARL

Everything was now ready for tonight.

The house was clean. I've cooked and I'm wearing a sexy black lingerie.

I'm now waiting for Aphelele to arrive. She's taking too long now. She usually knocks off at 18:00 but it's already 20:00 and she is not back already. I'm starting to get worried. What if she got to an accident on her way back?

I was about to call her when she walks in. She is surprised to see me. I take off my silk gown in the most seductive way and drop it on the floor.

I look at her while biting my lower lip. She just rolled her eyes. I looked down disappointed.

Her: "I thought you left"

Me: "Baby I'm sorry okay"

Her: "Don't change the topic why didn't you leave?"

Me: "I don't have anywhere to go"

Her: "Why did you leave your house in the first place?"

Me: "My.. my mother is toxic"

Her: "How is she toxic exactly?"

She leaned on the door.

Me: "She just wants to tell me how to live my life. She's suffocating me"

She chuckled.

Her: "She's not telling you how to live your life. She's helping you to live your life the right way. She doesn't want you making mistakes that you will later regret in life. You know you should consider yourself lucky to have someone guiding you but you're saying she's toxic. I wish my mother actually cares about me like yours cares about you. Not everyone has the lucky of feeling a mother's love but you're just being a bitch about it. You should be embracing it but you're complaining. Self inspection. You should check yourself. You're the one who has a problem here not her. You should decide what you want to do in life. You're old now. Nobody must think for you! You must learn to be independent cause you'll be left alone without a backbone"

After saying that she passed me and went to the living room where I set up our date. She looked at it then looked at me.

Her: "I'm not hungry. I ate at work. I didn't think I'll find you here"

Me: "I don't have-"

Her: "Yeah right I heard that but I need you out of here by tomorrow"

Me: "Baby how could you do this to me!! I thought you loved me"

Her: "Oh and about that I don't love you. My love ended a long time ago. I just wanted to make Mathapelo jealous. You're just a rebound. The sad thing is that Mathapelo isn't moved by this so it's useless stringing you along. It was nice while it lasted. You can take the couch. And also that lingerie looks good on you... You should wear it for someone who actually loves you"

Tears fell down. I'm beyond heart broken. Aphelele doesn't love me? I was only a rebound?! What's worst than that!! Finding that you were nothing but a rebound. I was ready for this relationship to work but it didn't.

Where should I go next? What do I do now? I have no one. I can't absolutely go home I'm too ashamed.

People were right when they said never trust a person...

To be continued...

52

A MONTH LATER...

MENZIWA ZULU

I rubbed her belly...

Me: "We should get Thando a baby sister or brother"

She laughed showing off her beautiful teeth.

MaShezi: "No thank you baby. I can't! I'm too old for that.."

I stopped rubbing her tummy and looked at her with puppy eyes.

Me: "Ngiyakucela mamakhe" (I beg you mamakhe)

MaShezi: "Nope. I'm really surprised you still want babies when you are expecting four kids from Mathapelo"

Me: "Well that doesn't mean I will stop making babies"

She looked at me horrified.

MaShezi: "Ayibo babazi you have seven kids mos"

Me: "I did say I want a big family"

MaShezi: "You've got serious issues shame"

I clasped her hands. I was laying in between her thighs. Her head resting on the big pillow supported by the headboard.

Me: "Zandile MaShezi Zulu"

MaShezi: "Babazi"

Me: "Allow me to marry you again. I want us to renew our vows"

She retracted her hands from mine.

MaShezi: "Why?"

Me: "Because babe... I've done you wrong a million times. I want us to try fix things"

MaShezi: "There's nothing broken"

I looked down.

Me: "So you don't want to marry me?"

MaShezi: "Menziwa we are already married!"

Me: "I want us to do it again... Please babe"

MaShezi: "Weddings are expensive you know"

Me: "It's all worth it"

MaShezi: (sighs) "Okay babe but let's wait for Mathapelo to give birth first"

Me: "Whatever you want my lady"

It's like we just got married with my wife cause we're like love struck teenagers. That's what I wanted for things to go back to normal.

My life has been bling and bliss. Everything is into place to be honest and I couldn't be happier.

Mathapelo is three months and a few weeks pregnant. Her stomach is really huge. MaShezi says that she will be expecting four kids and I'm happy but also nervous. It's not everyday where one gives birth to three kids! I'm so excited but there's still six months to go so I must hold my horses.

My mom has stopped me a couple of times before from buying clothes for my babies, she says that is attracting bad lucks but I don't believe in that but I'll wait since I respect my mother.

Makhosazane hasn't made contact and it's so unlike her. Maybe she has changed who knows. It's none of my business.

I also fixed my relationship with Aphelele, things are normal now. We're just waiting for the year to end so she could move to KZN. She told me she wanted fresh air and I respect her wishes if she wants to change the environment. She's had it tough all her life. I'm also providing for her now, made her move back to her old flat. I also made her stop working at Mathapelo's carwash... Not because I don't want her to be

independent but I still want to spoil her. She can be as independent as she wants once she reaches the age of 30.

That's seems far I know but I'm still her dad you know.

You heard that I said Mathapelo's carwash right? Yes I know.. I'm just laying low for a while. Mathapelo really thought she could hide a whole entire business from me? Like really though.. I'm a businessman so I was bound to find out at some point.

I want to help her but I will just wait for her. Women like to think they have everything under control so I'll let her think that. I'm just glad that she thought of that. Meaning she's not dependent on me should I decide to leave, but I won't leave... I already have four humans growing inside of her to run away now and also that I'm not one to run away from responsibility... That's just not who I am...

MaShezi has now gone to start cooking lunch so I'm left on the bed. I reach for my phone so I could send Lily some money. Lily is my first born aged 18, Thato who's 14 years then Thando who is 10.

They are all living with my wife's family. They liked it there so we suggested they go and live there. They only come here to visit.

After sending the money my phone rings in my hand just as I was about to put it down.. I don't recognize the number.

I answer anyway.

Me: "Menziwa Zulu hello"

Voice: "Good afternoon Menziwa you're speaking to Constable Dhlomo"

I stand on my feet.

Me: "Oh yes Constable it's been long"

Dhlomo: "I know Mr Zulu and I'm sorry for that. I had many cases that needed my full attention"

Me: "I understand"

Dhlomo: "With the kind of evidence that you gave me I must say this was an easy case"

Me: "So have you found the person who killed my brother?"

Dhlomo: "Yes and we are going to head there and start making arrests as soon as possible"

My heart almost stopped.

Me: "Who killed him?"

Dhlomo: "Makhosazane Zulu the wife together with Tebogo Mohlakoana the victim"



Me: "Wow... I.. I can't believe this!"

Dhlomo: "Me too hey... I'd love to chat more Mr Zulu but I've got people to arrest"

Me: "I totally understand... Thank you so much Constable"

Dhlomo: "I'm just doing my work"

After that I hang up. I let my weak knees carry me back to my bed. My heart is heavy. I can't believe I slept with that heartless woman! How could you kill your own husband!! Yes he wasn't a saint but rather have him arrested than to be killed! My head is spinning... They deserve to rot in jail!!

To even think I stopped my mother from causing misfortunes for people who killed my brother! It's not too late though... Now I will wait for Constable Dhlomo to call me when they find the body. I don't even think it's still a body. 20 years ain't no game.

After 10 minutes of me sitting in one place I decide to stand up and go to the main house to tell my mother these tragic news.... She will be devastated.

I walk to the main house....

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

I tap my foot on the ground as I impatiently wait for this Pamela of a person.

Wait what if that girl took my money then ran away with it? That would be so bad because I used my last money this can't afford to backfire! I can't afford that!!

As I'm waiting I see her approaching then I sigh in relief. I'm wearing a black doek covering my face and head I was wearing sunglasses as well. I can't risk Mathapelo seeing me. That would jeopardize everything I've worked hard for.

She gives me a cunning smile...

I give her the bottle with drops...

Me: "You know the deal right?"

Pamela: "Of course I do... After this you don't know me and I don't know you as well"

Me: "Good"

Pamela: "I'll text you when the job is done"

Me: "I'll be waiting for your call..."

Pamela: "It's a pleasure doing business with you"

Me: "Okay"

I hand her the small bottle and she puts it on her apron then goes back to the kitchen.

I go back to my car and take off the doek and sunglasses the breath out in relief. Now that went well... I've planned it for the whole month and now that it's done I'm happy...

I start the car then drive back home..

The thing is I wanted my revenge on Menziwa and Mathapelo so I made it possible. Mathapelo has her own business now so she's famous and that made things easier for me.

She has a shisanyama together with the car wash. It's really doing good I won't lie.

Pamela is the cook. They are really close with Mathapelo and that worked well for me. I got her closer to me and bang she told me everything there is to know about Mathapelo. She even knows her daily schedule now. Mathapelo doesn't trust anyone but Pamela so she's the one who always cooks and dishes up for her. No matter the loyalty when money speaks you listen.

After a whole lot of persuasion she finally gave in. I got the abortion drops and I was here to deliver them. Pamela will pour only three drops in her food then three in her drink. That will be enough to kill that bastard of the baby that ruined my marriage!

I paid 25k to Pamela so she could get the job done. After she's done I will transfer another 25k... It's a lot of money I know but

it's for my own healing. Once I know that they are also in pain I'll be able to move on, peacefully...

I am Makhosazane! No one messes with me then wins at the end... It doesn't work like that! It has never worked like that and it will never work like that.

There won't be a baby anymore and we will all be happy.

I take out my phone then call Aphelele. She answers after the second ring.

Her: "Mah"

Me: "Baby"

Her: "How can I help you?"

Me: (sighs) "Baby I'm sorry"

Her: "Okay cool. Anything else?"

Me: "You know I'm trying here.. I've been apologizing for a while now... Please forgive me my love. Let go of that grudge you hold dear to your heart. Don't do it for me do it for you. Let's start afresh"

Her: "You know you sound really desperate for a mother like you. You won't force me to forgive you. I'll do it when I feel like it so please just give me some space to deal with everything"

Me: "Okay baby... Whenever you ready"

Her: "Anything else?"

Me: "No baby. Bye I love you"

She hangs up. I sigh. This is going to be a long journey I'm telling you.

I gave myself another chance of being a parent. I know my kids are still angry at me but they will forgive me and then we'll be a happy family again.

For now I'll let Aphelele think I have accepted her for being lesbian but once we're close enough I'll change that! I don't support that nonsense of hers! I just want us to be close again.

My relationship with Tebogo also improved for the past couple of weeks. Tebogo is soft hearted so I knew he would forgive me.

Upon turning to my street I see people gathered in my house.

What is it now?!!

A lot of people are standing there watching. I wonder what's interesting that's in my house that seems to be attracting attention for me...

Upon parking Tebogo's car on the gate I see police cars... About three of them. I see a lot of police and forensic people gathered behind Tebogo's flat.

I almost pee on myself when I see that they've dug where Menzi is buried... This can't be good.

I freeze in the car not knowing whether to get off or just stay here.

I think of running away but it's too late. They have seen me.

I start feeling hot and sweaty. My hands start shaking. My throat goes dry immediately.

An officer comes to the car. I swallow the lump on my throat.

He instructs me to get out of the car and I get out. We walk into the yard.

Looks like their boss or something but when I arrive she smile deviously...

Him: "Hi. I am Constable Dhlomo with that said I say Makhosazane Zulu you're being arrested for the murder of Menzi Zulu who was your husband.. together with your boy child Tebogo.. anything you say or do will be used against you in the high court of law. Cuff her!"

The officer holds me tight while the other one cuffs me.

People gasp when they find out I'm the one who killed my own husband. The police will be off to get Tebogo... My heart shatters... My child will never find a job ever again in life all because I didn't pay attention..

I will survive prison but I know Tebogo won't. This will take us back 10 steps back.. it will really damage my child.

You can run away from everything but you can't run away from Constable Dhlomo... That's a fact. He's really famous around here, a dedicated officer.

After cuffing me they put me at the back of the van.

I look outside the window... This is how is all going to end... With me going to prison...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

Life has been great. I am getting there in being the woman that I've always wanted to be... It's like God has answered my prayers and saw beyond that I also need a chance. I thank him for that.

When I saw that my car wash is picking up I opened a shisanyama next to it so that when we're still washing the customer's car he/she will be busy eating meet and what not.

I've got tables and chairs now. The place really looks good now and I'm proud of myself. All that is left now is a pool table which I need to get soon. Since I'm not a very much busy person I won't be selling alcohol... I'll just sell meat and wash cars that's all.

I've got two girls cooking for me and one is a waiter. When time goes by I'll employ another waiter. I moved Michael from being a manager at the carwash to be a manager for the shisanyama. I'll be managing the carwash since it's not busy compared to the shisanyama.

I'm also huge now so I must work and also take short breaks every now and then. My babies just need to be strong, I'm trying to secure the bag. Once they are old enough they have to understand that success comes with a lot of work and the good things in life comes to those who wait.

I lay back on my chair and Pamela walks in with food. I'm salivating already... This looks yummy.

She has wors, stiff pap and cooked baked beans.

She places it in front of me together with my orange juice.

Me: "Aren't you a sweetheart?"

Pamela: "I am. Food for my favorite blesser"

Me: "Ihheee I'm your blesser now!"

Pamela: "You pay the bills mos"

Me: "And you work hard as well. I'm not only your boss here... We're family"

She wipes fake tears.



Pamela: (laughing) "Argh you're going to make me cry you know"

Me: "You're such a drama queen you know that"

Pamela: "You wouldn't love me if I didn't have any drama"

Me: "That's true"

Pamela: "Let me get back to work.. enjoy"

Me: "Thanks love"

As soon as she leaves I indulge on the delicious food. No wonder customers keep on coming back, this food is to die for.

Pamela has been really supportive and good to me I was thinking of making her the manager at the shisanyama then Michael goes back to managing the carwash because it's getting too much now.

These babies are heavy. I don't think I'll be to walk anymore but let me wait for next week before deciding.

My phone rings. It's Menziwa I answer.

Me: "I really don't appreciate you disturbing us eating"

Him: "Well I'm sorry girls it's just that daddy misses you guys"

Me: "We will be home soon"

Him: "You should really stop working now Mathapelo"

Me: "Soon"

Him: "Fine! What are you guys doing?"

Me: "We're eating food from the shisanyama"

Him: "Mmmh... Must be nice"

Suddenly I feel myself getting hot and sweaty. My stomach is in pain like someone is stabbing me with a knife.

Me: "Ahhhhh!!!"

Him: "Mathapelo what's Wrong?"

Me: "I... I don't know. My babies Menziwa my babies!! I feel like someone is stabbing my tummy!! Argh I'm in pain!!"

Him: "Oh no! Hold on mawabo I'm coming there right now!!"

Me: "I'll send you the address"

Him: "I Know where you are just hold on not for me only but for the babies"

I drop the phone when I see blood...

Me: "No! No! No! No Ayii ngengane zami!!" (Not with my kids)

Everything goes blank....

To be continued....

53

APHELELE (PHEH)

Him: "I would compare your character with Saturday"

I laughed..

Me: "Why Saturday though?"

Him: "Umhh... Because Saturday was a virgin"

Me: "Oh wow! Who said I'm a virgin?"

Him: "I can see a virgin you know"

Me: "Wow. Then you have a special gift then"

Him: "Not everyone has it my love"

Me: "I can see that you know"

Him: "Are you virgin vele?"

Me: "I thought you said I am"

Him: "I was just guessing not that I know"

Me: "Yes... Yes I am"

He looked at me.

Me: (laughing) "Your eyes are more beautiful when you're surprised"

Him: (blushing) "I didn't notice. Are you serious?"

Me: "Yeah I'm serious"

Him: "Wow I don't know what to say. How is that possible?"

Me: "Well since you know I was lesbian... I was the butch one meaning that I was playing the male role in a relationship. So I was the one doing all the work... Girls I've dated were just too shy to you know... Pleasure me"

Him: "Oh wow! I didn't even know that there was a butch in a lesbian relationship"

Me: "Well yes there is"

Him: "And what do you call the person who play the female role in a relationship?"

Me: "That's a femme"

Him: "I've learned something today. So I've noticed that you used \*I was a lesbian\* why?"

Me: "I have retired from dating you know especially girls. Whoever said that lesbians won't hurt you was totally lying! So no more shame! I'm good"

Him: "You have retired vele cause you're going to date me then we'll get married and have 15 kids together"

Me: (laughing) "you're joking right?"

Him: "I'm not"

I looked at him.

Me: "I really love your eyes"

Him: "I know. I love them too"

Me: (laughing) "Wow!! You're something else"

Him: "I know that's why you love me"

Me: "Who said I love you?"

Him: "You don't have to say it my love I can see"

I stood up and took the bowl to the kitchen. I stood next to the kitchen sink and smiled. I don't know the last time I felt this alive and happy. It feels nice you know.

I can say God has been really good to me this past few weeks.

I'm just glad I fixed things with my family cause they are the only ones I have left.

My uncle said he will take care of me so I stopped working. That was the best thing that has happened to me. I love to be spoiled and feel like a princess. I'm my uncle's princess.

We broke up with Pearl. I'm happy to say that's the best thing I have done in life. She was a burden. She didn't stop bothering me though so I decided to block her and she's been quite ever since.

My life has been better ever since Michael and I became close friends. Lol I can see you were thinking that we're dating. Nope! I decided to take things slowly you know. I was a lesbian yesterday and today I'm dating guys again nope! I won't do that. I need to allow my heart to heal first.

I've also developed a civil relationship with Mathapelo. I don't want enemies. Not that she was an enemy to me but I don't want to be the jealous and nton nton ex to her so we're civil towards each other. She is doing really well in life currently and I'm proud of her. One would expect her to move on but surprisingly she isn't seeing anyone at the moment.

I'm still going to KZN next year. I just hope all works out for me cause I don't know what would I do... But what do I have to worry about since I know even if I don't study my uncle will take care of me. I've seen how Mathapelo is independent so I would really like that to happen to me. Anything is possible.

My phone indicates a message coming in... It's from my mother.

"Phelele I'm arrested please come and see me"

I just delete the message. My mother can't be arrested.. for what?... She is just playing games with me. I know she isn't arrested... What could she do to be honest? She just wants my

attention, and I'm just too busy to give it to her. She should call upon her loving son, Tebogo and not me.

Speaking of her she has been asking forgiveness. I know my mother when she is serious and right now she isn't... There is something that she wants but she's afraid to ask for it.

I go back to where Michael is sitting in the lounge. We are at his apartment, and no what you are thinking is not what is happening. We haven't slept together. He's a gentleman like that even though he still wants to cuddle every night. I've been here for two days and I've been enjoying his company a lot.

We were watching almost everyone's favorite movie 'What Happened To Monday?'. That's why he compared me to Saturday.

Me: "You didn't tell me why you came home early today?"

Him: "Oh that. My boss has to be rushed to the hospital so we had to close early since the situation traumatized everyone"

I looked at him surprised.

Me: "Your boss is still Mathapelo right?"

Him: "Yeah sure"

Me: "Oh my! What happened?!!!"

Him: "I'm not sure but Pamela found her bleeding on the floor I don't know what happened to be honest"

Me: "No! No! Mathapelo is pregnant... That isn't supposed to happen! Where was Menziwa?"

Him: "He came shortly after with the ambulance. Do you know them?"

Me: "Yes I do! Menziwa is my uncle and Mathapelo is my ex"

Him: "So you got her pregnant?"

Me: "Argh dammit Michael! How could I get her pregnant? My uncle got her pregnant!"

Him: "So you and your uncle share an ex?"

Me: "Yes"

Him: "Ushaywa uncle ngestina!" (Your uncle took your girl)

Me: "Mxm!"

I got up again and dialed my uncle's number. He took long to answer.

Menziwa: "Aphelele"

Me: "Uncle I just found out that Mathapelo is admitted what happened?!"



Menziwa: (sniffing) "I don't know... She was on call with me and suddenly she had unbearable pains on her stomach.. I heard her scream and she just went quite. When I arrived at her work place she was laying on her pool of blood. The doctors haven't said anything to us so I don't know what's happening"

My heart dropped to my stomach. This was heartbreaking. No woman deserves this. I'm just praying she's okay with her baby.

Me: "I'm so sorry to hear that"

Menziwa: "Thank you"

Me: "I'm coming at the hospital now"

Menziwa: "Please do. We need to talk anyway before you hear it from other people"

Me: "About what?"

Menziwa: "Your mother"

Me: "What happened?"

Menziwa: "Just come here"

Me: "Okay.. I love you papa"

Menziwa: "I love you too my first born"

He hung up. My heart started beating fast. What if what my mother was saying is true? That she is arrested and Menziwa wants to confirm it? I just hope she is just arrested for stealing..

I don't know what would I do if it's murder or something big.  
Let me not think about that.

I turn to Michael.

Me: "Please take me to the hospital"

Him: "This late?"

I looked at the time... It was 19:47

Me: "Yes"

Him: "Okay"

He took his car keys then we left....

PEARL

"I'm still praying for you"

I looked at her text then deleted it. I can't deal with her right now. It's from my mother. I don't know why she's still praying for me. I don't need her prayers, they're just useless for a person like me. I long gave up on God. He has his favorites. Christians judge people too much.

I switched off my phone then went upstairs where all the girls were.

I went to Pamela..

Me: "I need a fix"

She gave me the drugs. I took the card and straw then sniffed it. It felt really good. I work really well after I've had my fix.

Pamela: "Don't take too much. You still need to work"

Me: "I work better when I've had my fix"

Pamela: "Are you hungry?"

Me: "No I'm not"

Pamela: "I've cooked"

Me: "You're good at cooking and I love your food but I'm not hungry babe"

Pamela: "Okay"

She kept pressing her phone.

Me: "What's wrong now?"

Pamela: "There's a person I'm waiting for who needs to pay me back my money"

Me: "How much?"

Pamela: "25k"

I whistled.

Me: "What did you do to get that amount?"

Pamela: "Well I can't say it but I could go to jail for it"

Me: "Have you tried calling her?"

Pamela: "Yes I have but her phone rings unanswered and the job is done"

Me: "Too bad"

Pamela: "I have no choice but to have her arrested! She can't double cross me like that"

Me: "It's a her kanti? Forget about getting your money back!"

Pamela: "I can't believe I trusted her!"

I laughed out loud. Pamela is what I can say our head girl. She's the boss's girlfriend. Everything must go thru her before reaching the boss's ears. She's living a soft life. I don't know why she's still working. She works as a cook at some shisanyama hence why she's so good at cooking. She's the one who prepares food for us, no one forces her but she just does it out of goodness of her heart. I really like her... She's fearless...

Pamela: "Spider was calling for you"

Me: "Do you also call him spider when you get down with it?"

Pamela: "That's none of your business"

I laughed at her.

Me: "I can imagine you screaming 'Spider... Oh bite me spider I'm yours!'..."

She took off her heel and aimed at me but I ducked. The other girls laughed.

I got out of the room and went to the study. Spider was sitting at the desk. I sat opposite him.

Me: "You asked for me"

Spider: "I want you tonight"

Me: (sighs) "But your girlfriend is home tonight"

Spider: "We'll just have to be careful"

Me: "I'm just scared if she finds out we're sleeping together"

Spider: "Pamela won't find out. Besides she's harmless.. she wouldn't kill a fly"

Me: (sighs) "If you say so then"

Spider: "I was serious when I said I love you and I want us to get married. Just wait for me... I'll break up with Pamela then we'll live happily ever after together"

Me: "I know... You've said it before. I love you too... I just... I don't appreciate you and Pamela being lovey dovey it hurts my soul cause I'm jealous.. I don't want anyone near you"

Spider: "I know my love I'm sorry"

Me: "It's okay I understand"

Spider: "But babe I also want you to stop sleeping with these different man everyday, I don't like it at all"

Me: "But babe I don't have a job.. this is the only work that I know"

Spider: "If I find you a job will you stop selling your body?"

Me: "Yes I will I promise"

Spider: "When you go back to your room dress up like you have a client then go to the location I will send you... I will come later so it won't be suspicious"

Me: "Okay"

Spider: "You can leave now I love you baby"

Me: "I love you too"

I get up and go to our room. I quickly change to the outfit I always wear when going out to work. I say my goodbyes to the girls then leave to the location Spider sent me.

It's been three weeks of me working here. I can say "The House" is back, not completely but we're getting there.

I have gotten back to being a prostitute. I didn't have a choice it is the only work that I know of and it provides me with a place to live so it was better.

Finding a job nowadays isn't easy.

Pamela saw that I'm desperate then hooked me up.

Apparently Bakkie gave Spider his drug business then sold him his house. Spider was Bakkie's right hand man. I don't get it though... Bakkie giving up everything? That means he was serious about choosing God and changing his ways. Some people got time to play though...I wouldn't give up things that gave me food and shelter. Life is hard God will have to understand.

I also didn't want to sleep with at least 6 guys per day which is the minimum... This life chose me.

Pamela is dating Spider. It happened that Spider and I shagged once and did it for the second time, then third

Advertisement

then fourth then we decided I'll be his side. I know it's wrong since Pamela is the one that got me the job but it happened that Spider caught feelings for me. He is now planning on leaving Pamela for me and I'm just hoping that happens really soon, I deserve to be the Mrs.

We are all living at Bakkie's house since Spider hasn't found a suitable place for us, but we sleep with the customers at where they want not where we live. We are about 20 girls. We're many I know but argh I'm used to this.

To be honest I don't love Spider. I just said I love him because he said he loves me too not that I love him truly. This is my ticket to the soft life that I want and deserve. I need to secure the bag even if it means dating someone that I don't love. Life is about that. Love for me ended the day that Aphelele broke up with me. I can't bring myself to love anymore. I'm just too hurt. I really loved and still love Aphelele.. it's just sad that she doesn't love me anymore.

Speaking of Aphelele I decided to stop bothering her because it's clear that she doesn't love me anymore. I will just have to move on with life, but somewhere in my heart there's still hope that we will get back together... But who knows?..

Also my mother has tried to make contact with me but I just shut her out. I don't need her fussing over me. I'm just afraid she will judge me. I'm afraid she will see me as a disappointment. Who wants a child that has slept with almost 50men in her life? No one so that's why I decided to just forget about them and continue living my life.

The cab arrives at the BnB that Spider said I should go to... This place is really nice....

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

He kisses me. I feel like puking if he kisses me, but I don't get to say anything because I'm the one who chose this life.



If I were to get another chance I would go back to time and decline his offer of working at his law firm. I would still be a bartender. Yes the money was too little but my life was peaceful than the mess that it is right now. I would do anything to go back to how my life was. If only I could turn back the hands of time, I would.

I kiss him back before I earn myself a slap. I've been getting many of those lately so I don't want one today.

After 5 minutes of kissing he stops. Five minutes feels like five hours with this guy.

He looks at me and I could tell he's satisfied with himself. I just want to wipe his smile with a massive slap. Mxm.

Jason: "I may not say this everyday but I really appreciate the love that you have for me Tebogo and I'm sorry my love for being physical with you. I didn't mean it. It's just that you frustrate me sometimes to a point where I lose my temper. I really love you Mi Amor please stop angering me. I want what's best for you and me. You're the only man for me"

Mxm. I know him. That's not the first time he's saying that. He always apologizes after being physical with me then claims he loves me.

If my mother knew that another man beats me up and I'm his wife she would choke on her own saliva. I didn't imagine my life

to be this way. Another man beating me up every chance he gets!

To every woman who is being abused out there physically, emotionally and mentally I want to say I feel your pain. I know what you're going thru. I know the pain of wanting to leave but seeing how abusive your partner is you just can't leave.

Police. Scoffs. Jason is the owner of a law firm. If I get him arrested he has amongst the best of lawyers who would do their best to get him out. I've seen them at work. They have lost 5 cases in all the five years the company has been existing in. Also Jason has billions so he would just bribe everyone and anyone who would come in his way. That guy could even bribe Cyril Ramaphosa with the amount of money that he has.

Me: "I forgive you. Just don't do it again"

Jason: "I won't I probably"

Our forgiving session always ends this way after he has apologized. With me forgiving him. Him promising not to do it again but 1 day later he does it again so yeah nothing amazes me about this guy anymore.

Jason: "And babe please pick up a car that you want. Tomorrow I'll be buying a car for you"

Me: "Okay"

Jason: "You don't seem happy"

Me: "I'm happy it's just that I have a lot on my mind"

Jason: "Care to share?"

Me: "I'd rather not"

Jason: "Okay then I won't force you. Baby whenever you want anything don't be afraid to ask. I'll be there when you need me okay?"

Me: (fakes a smile) "Thank you baby. Don't worry I'll tell you"

If the love was genuine and we had a great relationship going on I would jump if my partner said \*I'll buy you a car\* but argh I'm not happy.

Yesterday it was shopping, the day before yesterday it was a brand new phone and today it's a car.. see what I mean?

He's just buying my forgiveness. I know for sure that he will buy it tomorrow. He always does.

The door bell rings. I stand up to go attend it since the maids have gone to bed.

Jason: "I wouldn't answer that if I were you"

I just ignore him and go open the door. I find police. About five of them.

Cop 1: "Good evening, can we come in?"

Me: "Of course"

I lead them to the living room where we are sitting.

Jason looks happy to see the cops here. I wonder why he's happy because maybe her maids sold us out and they are here to arrest us for killing Bella.

Only three of them sit down and the two remain standing.

Jason: "How can we help you officer?"

Cop 1: "You know I hate chasing after criminals Mr. Law. If you done something against the law please just come and plead your case. It's tiring to be honest. I should be having dinner with my wife like you guys but here I am chasing after criminals who should be locked up"

Jason: "Indeed"

Cop 1: "Where are my manners... I'm Constable Dhlomo"

I swallow. I've heard of Constable Dhlomo. He has the best amongst all of them. He is one cop that is serving the country truly. He isn't corrupt like most cops. You just take out a stack of money and he will smile. He isn't like that.

Jason: "And how can we help you Constable Dhlomo?"

Dhlomo: "I'm here to make an arrest"

Jason: "To who?"

Dhlomo: "To this guy"

He pointed me. I almost peed on my self.

Dhlomo: "Tebogo Mohlakoana you are under arrest for the murder of Menzi Zulu.. anything you say will be used against the court of law. You have a right to get a lawyer if you don't have one the court will provide one for you. Mdletshe cuff him"

The guy came and cuff me. I was in disbelief. I can't believe I just got arrested. They cuffed me and we stood up. Jason smiled.

Dhlomo: "Mr Law sir I want to say thank you for providing us with evidence with this case. If it wasn't for you I would still be trying to solve this case"

Jason: "It was a pleasure Constable"

Dhlomo: "The country still needs men like you. Who fight for justice"

Jason: "I'm just glad to help in putting the bad guys away"

My heart broke. I can't believe Jason helped the cops in arresting me. Why would he do that to me!! Wow! Indeed never trust a person.

When we were outside Dhlomo spoke to me.

Dhlomo: "We have already arrested mommy dearest. One thing is that never run away from the law. It always finds you. Don't worry about him, we are still coming back for him. I know what you guys did. Today it's still your day to shine"

They took me to their van.

They got my mother as well. That explains why I haven't heard from her all day. They arrested her.

I'm still stuck on the last part though. That means Dhlomo knows that we killed Bella. But who could have told him?...

That means I have two cases. I will rot in jail. I'm never getting out. I shed a few tears as the cops drive away with me.

They tell the truth when they say "No Sin Goes Unpaid"

I made my bed I should lie on it...

To be continued....

## BAKKIE

Me: "Fake pastors always have things to show us to make us believe that indeed the Lord is alive and working. To them if we believe that then they will have more offerings and fame. I believe in that when you want to see how God works it should happen in your own life. Yes there are some testimonies that other people have but to me I only believe it when that thing is happening to me because the amount of fake people that we have in this world makes it hard to believe everything that you see. I was a famous drug dealer. I was also a boss that allowed girls to sell their bodies to men for money. The sad thing is that money was mine. The girls only got 20% of it. I didn't sleep with the men... The girls did. I was in love... The girl that I loved turned out to be my cousin. I was shattered cause she was already pregnant with my child. She wanted to abort but I couldn't let her do it, I loved my baby and wanted so bad to be a father but I guess the timing wasn't right she miscarried"

Everyone went "mmmmh"

Me: "After that my mother told me to stay away but I didn't.. I stalked her, threatened every guy that came near her... Would you blame me though I was in love... It was the very first time I fell in love with a woman. One thing people don't know about me is that I was gay"

Everyone looked surprised to hear that.

Me: "Yes.. I was gay. The guy that I was dating broke my heart so I let go of him. I didn't think I would love again so when it happened that I feel in love I made sure to never let that person go, even if I found out that I'm dating my cousin I couldn't let go still. That's how my life was going. I would send her money trying to make her see that I'm capable of taking care of her and she gladly accepted it. You know love could make you do things that you thought you wouldn't. I actually sold the girls that worked for me just because she didn't want them. I was changing just for her. Let me make this clear she was working for me as well. Yes she was selling her body. I would say that kind of helped me because I'm no longer that person anymore.

Then it happened that me and my biological mother met. We created a plan to end my mother's life. I would go to her house then sprinkle something on her door step when I leave since we knew that she wakes up first we knew that she would leave first so the muti would work on her. She would have an accident on her way to work and die a painful death but as you all know my mother is a praying woman that didn't happen. God couldn't allow it! When I arrived at her house, the moment she gave me a hug I felt at home, I felt at peace. Everything made sense. I apologized and told her everything. I also apologized to my



cousin and also God himself. From that day I became a born again. I'm now living for the Lord and no one else. He cleansed me. Sins have no match with me. I have sold everything that belonged to the devil. I'm now working at Boxer as a cashier. Yes the money isn't enough but we don't go to bed on an empty stomach. When the time is right God will answer for me. I'm no longer gay. I have found THE MAN IN ME that was lost. I'm no longer obsessed"

They all shouted Amen.

Me: "Ladies young or old never settle for less. We men fear independent women cause those can leave anytime cause they got their own backs. When you are relying on someone you are giving them advantage to use you anyhow. Rely only on God not on men. God will never take you for granted because he always has your back. Be independent! Be strong! No one is you than the you that you are!"

They clapped hands.

Me: "You have your own back! Repeat after me: I have my own back!"

Them: "I have my own back!"

Me: "Thank you ladies. Enjoy your night"

I stepped down from the stage and walked out while they were clapping hands.

It was the woman's night prayer. My mother was also here. They invited me to speak to them. They were all women from church... Young and old.

I was now going to head back home cause they are about to sleep soon. They have to pray then sleep.

My mother comes to me. She hugs me.

Her: "I am really proud of you my baby".

Me: "Thanks my love"

Her: "You should be a pastor one day"

Me: (laughing) "Me? Pastor? Never mommy!"

Her: "Oh well I've tried then. Good sermon you had there"

Me: "It wasn't a sermon mama I was just advising you guys"

Her: "Thank you son"

Me: "it's my pleasure mom. Let me leave you guys"

Her: "No! I just don't appreciate you walking at night"

Me: "But Mah...."

Her: "It's not up for discussion"

Me: "I left J.R alone"

Her: "He's not a baby. He wouldn't mind sleeping alone or better yet his girlfriend"

Me: "I'm not a baby you know"

Her: "Yes. You're my big baby and mommy loves you very much"

Me: "And I love my mother very much"

Her: "Thank you baby"

Me: "Mommy dearest where am I going to sleep?"

Her: "In the pastor's office. The girls have already prepared everything for you"

Me: "You're my darling you know that"

Her: "Yes I know that and that's why you love me"

Me: "Let me go sleep I'm tired"

Her: "Goodnight baby"

Me: "Goodnight love"

'Fear not for I am with you'

That's what I've been doing for the past few weeks. Letting God rule my life.

I sold my house, to my surprise Spider is the one who bought it. I found a job at Boxer. It has also been nice living with J.R and my mother.

I no longer use the name "Bakkie" since I got it from my evil ways. I am now "Bayandiswa"

I head to where I am supposed to sleep. I find Dintle and Liswa giggling in my room. The thing is I have been a speaker here at church for about 2 weeks now, and these girls just love me. If it was the old Bakkie I would smash them both in the same time but I don't do that anymore.

Dintle: "Brother Bayandiswa we have prepared everything that you're going to need for the night"

Me: "Thank you so much girls"

Liswa: "If you need anything I mean ANYTHING don't be afraid to tell us"

Me: "I will"

Dintle: "Goodnight then we love you"

See what I'm talking about.

Me: "Goodnight"

Liswa: "We said we love you"

Me: "I know. If you could can you please excuse me I want to sleep"

Dintle: "We will see you in the morning"

They leave. I sigh in relief. Those girls are something else hey.

I haven't found someone I could date. I'm still hurt. Three weeks back I started attending this church.. this is where my mother attends. I haven't seen nor found any girl that I'm interested in, but there's no rush there's still time.

I get into the blankets and say my prayers then I'm off to lala land....

APHELELE (PHEH)

We arrive at the hospital. I tell Michael to wait for me in the car. I quickly dial my uncle's number so he could tell me where they are. I just walk straight as how he directed me. I find them sitting on the benches. It's him

Advertisement

Mam'Zulu and MaShezi.

I greet everyone and just hug my uncle. He is going thru a lot right now.

After breaking the hug we sit down on the benches.

Me: "How are you feeling?"

Uncle: "I'll be fine once the doctors tell me what's happening. We've been here for seven hours and still we haven't heard anything"

I clasped his hands.

Me: "It will be okay"

Uncle: "Baby I need to tell you something"

Me: "You'll tell me later now isn't the time"

Uncle: "Oh trust me if I don't tell you now tomorrow will be too late"

Me: "Okay"

Uncle: "So your mother told you that your father died when you were little right?"

Me: "Yes"

Uncle: "So it's true. My twin brother disappeared into thin air so we all concluded that he is dead, it's been twenty years. Mam'Zulu couldn't rest without finding out what happened to her son so we decided to reopen the case. I went and searched thru your house and found an envelope that contained everything that we needed to know. It turns out Tebogo and Makhosazane killed your father by stabbing him with a kitchen knife, then they buried him behind Tebogo's flat"

Tears streamed down. I can't believe this! All along my father was right under my nose. I would say my uncle is lying but I know that place where he was buried. I've seen it before and my mother would always shout at me if I went there to play. All my growing life I knew better then to go and play behind Tebogo's flat.

That explains everything. It explains why my mother hated me so much. Guilt was eating her up together with her precious son hence why they bonded so much, they share murder together!

I've never been this broken before. Yes I didn't know my father that well but they robbed me a chance to know him. Maybe my life would have been different if my father was alive, but some people decided to take him away from me.

I cry in my uncle's arms. It hurts so bad. It's not everyday where you wake up and find that your mother and brother killed your father. Today I'm officially burying my mother and brother. They no longer exist in my life!

I wanna know why though... Why did they kill my king. I want to know. What they did is unacceptable!!

Uncle: "And also..."

Me: "I've heard enough! I'm in pain! I hate my mother right now! Today I bury her and her son! I no longer have a mother and brother! They are both dead to me!!!"

My uncle rubs my back. I keep wiping my tears but it's like I'm calling them cause they come in millions.

As I stand up the doctor comes out of the ward. They stand up as well.

Doc: "Mathapelo Mokoena"

Me: "That's us doc"

Doc: "I have both good news and bad news"

Mam'Zulu: "The bad news first"

Doc: "We lost the baby"

MaShezi: "The good news?"

Doc: "As you have suspected she was indeed pregnant with quadruplets. She only lost one baby, the others are alive and kicking"

We all sigh in relief. I didn't know it was more than one child.

Uncle M: "So doc did you manage to find what made her miscarry?"

Doc: "Yes we did. Mathapelo was poisoned and the drug she was poisoned with was really quick because if you didn't bring



her in time she would have lost all the babies. They poisoned with illegal drops invented by people who want to abort"

My heart shatters again. Who would do something like that?!

Me: "Doc can we see her?"

Doc: "She's awake but only one is allowed to go in and must leave after 30 minutes because she still needs to rest"

Uncle: "I will go"

MaShezi: "We will wait for you"

Uncle: "Don't wait. I'll find you at home"

Mam'Zulu: "But no one amongst us know how to drive"

Me: "I'll drive you guys"

Uncle: "Thank you Pheh"

Mam'Zulu: "Remain strong son"

Uncle: "Okay I will"

We walk out. I have the key with me. I rush to tell Michael to leave without me. He agrees then leaves.

We all go to the car then drive off to the Zulu residence....

It's been a long night I need to rest...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

I've been awake for almost thirty minutes now.

My heart is in a million pieces. The doctors have told me what happened. How I actually lost my baby. I've cried and now I don't have any tears left. I just want to go home because these walls seem to depress me.

Just when I thought things were going well for me I lose my baby. If I was only pregnant with one baby I would have lost him/her but God decided to bless me with four but one person decided to kill one. I'm hurt I won't lie it hurts.

It even hurts more since I know who killed my baby. It's that witch Pamela. I'm sure of this because I was fine before eating her food. After eating her food that's when my baby died.

I will make sure she rots in hell. That girl ruined everything for me!! The perfect plans I had for my kids!

I also want to know why she did that! Why would someone want to kill an innocent baby? Khuselo didn't do anything wrong to anyone. If she wanted a fight she would have fought with me not with my baby. That's what angers me!

The police should arrest her before I get my hands on her because if I find her before them I'll be arrested for murder!

I will never ever trust anyone again! I'll never even have someone I call a friend! A friend I trusted, someone I trusted

turned out to be the one who hurts me the most.. someone who killed my soul.

I'll never be the same again!! She broke me!

Menziwa walks in with the nurse. You could tell by his walk that he is broken. The nurse leaves him halfway then walks out.

He comes to me. A real man has be broken here. You can see pain written in his eyes.

He hugs me tight but careful not to hurt me. I sob in his arms. I hear him sniffing indicating that he's also crying. I have never seen him crying before. It's the first time. I have never seen this vulnerable side of him and to be honest it's hurting me.

After a while, we both stop crying. Our foreheads are against each other. He is looking at me with red eyes.

Menziwa: "I'm sorry I wasn't there to save Khuselo"

Me: "It's okay. It's not your fault. Don't blame yourself, no one knew that she would leave us so soon"

Menziwa: "I will find whoever took her away from us"

Me: "I know who is she. Her name is Pamela. She's a cook at the shisanyama"

Menziwa: "Are you sure?"

Me: "100%"

Menziwa: "I will make sure she pays for what she did I promise"

Me: "Thank you"

He hugs me again and we stay in that position for a while. Our heartbeats talking to each other. We can both relate to the pain we are feeling inside because we both lost something special and rare. What's sad is that we will never replace Khuselo even if we wanted to.

It's something we have to live with for the rest of our lives. Yes she is gone but she will never be forgotten.

She will remain in our hearts forever.

Rest In Peace Khuselo... Your parents will always love you.  
Forever till the end of time...

Goodnight my love....

To be continued...

55

2 WEEKS LATER

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

'In reality, no one is actually arrested for acting out of "self-defense". Self-defense is not a crime, therefore you can't be charged for it'

Well I wish the judge who was handling my case knew that before actually giving me 5 years of imprisonment. I don't know how this law thing actually works but it doesn't matter anymore cause I'm arrested now, I just have to accept things as they are.

Even if I wasn't charged but I would still go to prison because I was an accomplice to Bella Law's death.

Accomplice- a person who helps another commit a crime(noun)

Two weeks back I spent a whole week in a holding cell. During that week Jason was also arrested. As I've said it that I don't know how this particular judge works you would know by now that even Jason couldn't bribe him. He's that dedicated just like Constable Dhlomo.

It turns out that one of the maids reported the matter to the police. The police couldn't tell us her name for protection purposes because if we knew she would be dead by now. Jason

doesn't waste time. The police dug up Bella as well and last week she was laid to rest by her relatives.

I won't lie and say I remember what the judge said but I know I have been sentenced 10 years with no parole.

After more investigation from my mother's lawyer they concluded that I was acting out of self-defense since Menzi was molesting me, and with that I was sentenced 5 years in prison for killing Menzi because even if he molested me I had no right to kill him well that's what the judge said of course not me. It's sad how our cases are being handled here in South Africa. If it was a different country maybe I would be free by now.

For me taking part in the killing of Bella I also got five years. I was an accomplice. If I helped in killing her then I would be arrested for murder.

Also my mother is arrested as well and because she actually killed him she got sentenced 25 years with no parole. I feel sorry for her though... At the end of the day she's still my mother and I love her. I don't think she will be able to survive prison, not that I will survive myself but my mother is old so you could imagine how this whole thing will traumatize her.

Today it's Wednesday so basically I've spent five days of my ten years.... meaning I've been in prison for five days now and I must say it's hard. I didn't know that people who are arrested

live under these sickening conditions. Life inside is unbearable. I don't think I will survive a year..don't get me started on ten years that I still need to finish as well.

You sleep with one eye open. All guys want to "taste" me since I'm from outside. There has been a war already. Gangs fighting over me. You get treated like a king during the day but at night you pay for that courtesy under the sheets.

Who knew I would eat cabbage five days in a row.

It's hard not having some sort of connection with the outside world. You're trapped in one place. Not knowing whether you'll wake up alive or not. Tears stream down on my cheeks everyday at night.. because I didn't choose to look attractive to a grown old man. I cry because I think of my mother everyday, I doubt she's barely hanging on. I cry because I want to commit suicide so bad but I don't have the guts to do it. I cry because life is now a burden, it's not fun to be alive. You struggle to wake up and also struggle to fall asleep. I want to commit suicide but also I'm afraid to be killed while I'm still asleep.

The only thing I'm grateful for right now is that Aphelele forgave me. Yesterday she visited me and we talked things thru. Yes we were wrong for killing her father but nobody likes being molested. She understood my pain more than anyone. I also told her about witchcraft. I didn't think she would forgive

me but she did and for that I thank her for giving me a second chance.

She is basically the only thing that makes me hold on a little more. I'm doing this for her, to prove that indeed I have changed. Aphelele I will be patient.. I'll wait for my ten years to finish up then I'll come back home to you lil sis. I do it for you now.

The time I fear the most has arrived... To bath. Nothing is as traumatizing as bathing in prison because that's when all the bad memories are made.

I take my things then head to the showers. I find Pig and his squad already there. I would turn around but I'd be asking for trouble so I just continue walking towards the showers.

He got the name pig because of his huge body. If thoughts were heard I'd be dead by now.

I just keep my head down and mind my business.

That's very important in prison, minding your own business.

He speaks in his girly voice. I don't know how a powerful man like him got such a girly voice.

Pig: "Word is out that you were Jason's wife"



They all laugh. Other inmates turn and look at me.

Pig: "You've got a nice body I must say. You've been here for long now. I guess by now you know everything so your time of being treated like an egg has come to an end"

My heart almost sinks. Ever since I have arrived here nobody has molested me before. This will be the first time...

Pig: "Run the soap all over your body especially your ass... I'm coming now baby.. daddy is coming"

I know if I don't do this then there will be hell to pay so I start running water and soap on my body.

Once I'm done Pig and his friends make their way to me...

This is not good....

MENZIWA ZULU

It's been hard two weeks of my whole life.

Can someone explain to me how can someone disappear into thin air? How could someone as famous as Pamela disappear without anyone knowing where she is? I'm so angry right now.. No! Being angry is an understatement I'm fuming!

Someone kills my baby girl then disappear?! That can't happen! That's nonsense! Nobody messes with Menziwa Zulu and gets away with it! Especially if it involves my kids! You will die

shame! Even if it means I go to prison I don't care but I know my kids will be safe.

Well it's been exactly two weeks since we've lost my baby I mean our baby.

Mathapelo is taking this hard. She has also stopped going to the carwash. I have fear though if she continues to stress this way she will miscarry the others and I can't have that. I'm already dealing with a lot with Khuselo's death I can't afford another death of any baby..I will die.

I'm also hurting. IsiKhuselo Sami. My life will never be the same again. Our lives will never be the same again.

We're all mourning. I've also taken a leave at work. I need to deal with family issues first then go back. Not that I asked anyone to take a leave but I just did it with my own permission, I'm the owner so why not.

Mathapelo was discharged after five days of being admitted, then we started looking for Pamela. It turns out we were too late because she was already gone. She resigned at the shisanyama from there no one knows where she went.

I was finding it hard to believe that Mathapelo was poisoned I just thought she wanted to low-key abort then blame innocent people but after seeing this Pamela of a person disappear I saw

that indeed she was telling the truth because you don't run away unless of course your conscience is guilty.

I have hired a PI but so far he hasn't found anything.

Enough about Pamela... My mother is happy that Makhosazane and Tebogo are arrested, but I feel like Tebogo wasn't supposed to get arrested. I kind of feel bad right now. That poor boy was molested... but you can't cry over spilt milk.

My mother has found closure. Last week we finally laid my brother to rest... Even though we barely recognized the body and all because it's been long but at least he's resting with our forefathers... At the right place. Everything went really well.

MaShezi walks in with a plate of food. She places it on top of the chest of drawers then kneel behind me on bed then massages me. She starts kissing my neck.. I remove her from me.

Me: "Babe sizilile angithi?" (Babe we're mourning right?)

MaShezi: "But babe that doesn't mean that we can't have sex like normal people do?"

Me: "I'm just mourning the death of IsiKhuselo Sami that's all"

MaShezi: "You know I was trying to be a good wife here and help you release some stress"

Me: "Well maybe just stop being a good wife!!"

She looks at me in disbelief. I sigh...

Me: "Babe... Look.. urgh.. I'm sorry my love. I'm going thru a lot right now please understand"

MaShezi: "Maybe you're right I should just stop being a good wife or better yet stop being a good person all in all because everyone takes advantage of your kindness. I'm glad you told me how you feel Babazii. Let's just hope you'll enjoy the new me"

Me: "Sthandwa Sami..."

She gets up from the bed and takes the plate then stands before opening the door..

MaShezi: "A good wife cooks... You should go to culinary school since you'll be cooking for yourself from now on"

She bangs the door after getting out.

Argh Zandile is just being dramatic, she will never change even if she wanted to... She just wants me to pay attention to her which I won't do right now I'm just too busy. I will deal with her drama later.

I also stand up and wear my shoes. I'm off to check up on Mathapelo. This has become something I do regularly now. She is in more pain more than me. The doctor advised me to take a

good care of her. She's very fragile at the moment so she needs all the attention there is...

On my way out I find my mother on door. I'm thinking she was going to knock. I close the door behind me and we stand outside. I know if we go inside this conversation will take too long to end..

Me: "Mom"

Mam'Zulu: "Are you in love with Mathapelo?"

Me: "What!?! Of course not!"

Mam'Zulu: "Good then because I was starting to think you two are back together. Menziwa I know you, when you start acting this way it means you are in love again. You can't hurt your wife again. Yes we know you guys lost Khuselo, we all lost her but that doesn't mean some things should be held back. Life goes on. She's never coming back. It's not easy accepting death but we just learn to live with it. If we all dragged our feet every time someone died our lives would still be standing so please don't do something that will cost you your wife. I'm done"

After saying that she goes back to the main house.

Well it seems like everyone doesn't understand. Well I guess it's just me and Mathapelo who understand.

MaShezi wouldn't understand. She has never miscarried before.  
I don't know about mom though.

I continue going to Mathapelo's house. We need to bond once  
again today.

PEARL

He keeps rubbing my back. His chest feels like the safest place  
on Earth.

If only I had "love" for him, not pretending as I have.

Spider: "Pumpkin"

Me: "Yes boo"

Spider: "Thank you my love"

Me: "For what?"

Spider: "For everything you've done for me"

Me: "I haven't done anything my love"

Spider: "I know babe but your love, attention and the pumpkin  
in-between your thighs can keep a man for years"

Me: "Well if you say so then it's a pleasure my love"

Spider: "Babe?"

Me: "Yes?"

Spider: "Let's get married"

I rose up and sat with my bums.

Me: "Huh?!"

Spider: "I wasn't playing when I said I'm serious about you. I really love you and I want you to be my wife"

Me: "Wow.... I.... I don't know what to say"

Spider: "Just agree my love"

Me: "Saying wedding vows already?"

Spider: (laughing) "No my love"

Me: "I will marry you"

Spider: "Sorry what?"

Me: "I will marry you Zenzo"

We kissed...

Spider: "Thank you baby... This means a lot to me"

Me: "I love you"

Spider: "I love you more"

Pamela is a godsend you know. Her disappearance made my life much easier...

These past two weeks have been great without her not only because I get to devour her man freely because I'm the now acting boss lady and boy it feels great to give out instructions then people do it.

You guys are jealous shame... Why didn't anyone told me that it's this nice to lead people no not lead people but boss them around. It feels nice to have some respect for a while.

Although other girls were totally against it but they had no choice to accept it.

Yes there are rumors about me spreading thru the house but because they don't say that in front of my face that means they are scared of me.

I like being fearless you know.

Spider really loves me to be honest. He has been treating me like a princess... Argh not a princess.. a Queen. Spoiling me, taking me out on dates and what not.

He may be a serious business man but he's a teddy bear when it comes to me... His prized possession.

I like how he loves me. Too bad I don't love him back.

The only reason why I agreed to marry him is because of the benefits I'll be getting from this marriage. I'll just have to fall in love with him along the way. How hard can it be?



You know it's really hard these days to find a financially stable guy who wants to get married... So who am I to let a chance like this go? It comes once in life, so I must take.

I just hope Pamela won't rise up from wherever hellhole she is because she will ruin a lot of things for me and I don't certainly want that!

She must stay put and not ruin my marriage!

My phone rings and it's a number I don't recognize...

Me: "Hello"

Voice: "My baby"

Me: "Mah?"

Spider goes to the toilet...

Mah: "I'm sorry to bother you but I just wanted to tell you that come hell or high waters I will always love you mntanami.. Always remember that"

Me: "Is that all?"

Mah: "Yes my love"

Me: "I would really appreciate it if you could just stop calling me! Can everybody just leave me alone!! I want to live my life in peace!!"

Mah: "I won't ever bother you again"

Me: "Thank you very much!"

Mah: "Your mother loves-"

I hang up.

My mother should just leave me alone! I'm not a baby anymore! I want to live my life in peace! I don't want to be judged right now!

I need to be myself... I need to breathe...

To be continued...

56

MATHAPELO (PELO)

He walks in...

At this moment I just feel like rolling my eyes...

Menziwa: "Hey"

Me: "Hi"

Menziwa: "How are you guys today?"

Me: "We're good ain't complaining"

Menziwa: "Mmmhh"

[SILENCE]

Me: "I'm going to work tomorrow"

Menziwa: "Don't you think it's a bit too early?"

Me: "When will it be okay? Don't get me wrong I'm hurting but it's time to move on. I'm not forgetting about our daughter but I'm just learning to live without her. Sitting her and doing nothing all day is going to depress me for good"

Menziwa: "If you say so then I understand"

Me: "Thank you"

Menziwa: "Yeah so when were you going to tell me that you run a business?"

Me: "I was going to tell you when it finally becomes successful"

Menziwa: "But it's successful now"

Me: "I just wasn't ready yet"

Menziwa: "Okay then. Can I ask you something?"

Me: "Yeah sure"

He makes his way to me and sits next to me on the bed. I swallow.

Menziwa: "Are you seeing someone?"

Me: (clears throat) "umhh... no. Why do you ask?"

Menziwa: "I ask because they do say that pregnant women love sex"

Me: "Oh that. It depends... We're not the same you know"

Menziwa: "That's good then because I would murder someone if you were to sleep with another man while carrying my babies"

Me: "Don't worry"

He leans trying to kiss me. I get away from him.

Me: "Menziwa please don't do that"

Menziwa: "Argh come on Pelo I know you want it too"

Me: "No I don't"

Menziwa: "Wow then why were you closer to me these past few weeks?"

Me: "I was closer to you because we shared common pain, we both lost our child and not because I want you back... You got it all wrong. I would never want you back!"

Menziwa: (sniffs) "You don't love me?"

Me: "No Menziwa I don't! I fell out of love with you a long time ago. I want you to be part of your children's lives. If it wasn't for that I would have long left your life. I don't like living here! I want to have my own things!"

Menziwa: "It's okay I understand"

Me: "Yes please. You've hurt your wife too much already... Give her a break"

Menziwa: "Let me go then"

Me: "Yes. Thank you for checking up on us"

Menziwa: "That's what a good father do right?"

Me: "Right"

He stands up and leaves... When he opens the door he is met by MaShezi's angry face. She looks hurt more than angry. It's clear that she heard the whole conversation. It's just like I was hearing that someone was eavesdropping because the way I declined Menziwa is like I was seeing someone. Imagine if I actually agreed to kiss him... Wow hey.

MaShezi: "A cheetah never changes its spots.. remember these words because this isn't the last time you hear them. Nxx!!"

She turns back and walks back into the main house.

Menziwa sighs in defeat. Well I also don't have anything to say to him.. he's the one who asked me to kiss him not me so he is in his mess all alone and not with me.

He also gets out with his tail between his legs.

Once he leaves I strip naked then walk to my bathtub. I need this soothing bath to free me from stress.

I've been doing quite better. I've been seeing a therapist who's been helping me to get thru with everything. It isn't an easy process and I need to understand that I don't need to rush healing... It will happen on its own.

I am going to focus on building a legacy for my children... You can never confirm with their father you know. Right now

everything is at stake since the wife heard what her husband said. I may wake up tomorrow with no place to live so I need to make sure I got myself when everything comes crashing down on me.

I get out of the bathtub and wrap a towel around my body then drain the water from the bathtub.

When I get to my room my phone rings.

I hesitate to answer since it's a number I don't recognize, but since I am now a business woman I answer...

Me: "Hello"

Voice: "Let me start by saying congratulations Miss Mokoena. Welcome to the world of business"

Me: "Thank you"

Voice: "I'm glad you used my money very well and for that I salute you my lady"

Me: (laughing) "Oh wow I can see that you're still a flirt Mr Zwane"

Voice: "Well that is the only thing that I still manage to do from the past you know"

Me: "Bakkie how are you?"

Bakkie: "I'm a changed man you know... I go by Bayandiswa now"

Me: "Oh well my bad I didn't know hey"

Bakkie: "I'm good Miss Mokoena and how are you?"

Me: "I'm great I've just been busy lately"

Bakkie: "Business?"

Me: "Well that and my personal life"

Bakkie: "Anything bad happened?"

Me: "I lost my baby"

Bakkie: "Didn't even know you were pregnant but I'm sorry for your lost"

Me: "Thank you. I'm just taking it a day at a time"

Bakkie: "Just don't forget to pray"

Me: "Oh wow! Didn't think I'd hear that from you"

Bakkie: "I did say I'm a changed man didn't I?"

Me: "What else has changed?"

Bakkie: "Mind catching lunch so I can tell you all about it?"

Me: "I don't mind at all"



Bakkie: "So when will you be able to have lunch seeing that you're now a busy woman?"

Me: "Well since I'm the boss I would ask you"

Bakkie: (laughing) "wow how nice... My day off is today so how about now?"

Me: "Perfect. Let me get ready then"

Bakkie: "Please choose a place that you're comfortable with then text me"

Me: "Okay cool you'll hear from me then"

Bakkie: "Bye for now Miss Mokoena"

Me: "Bye boss!"

Bakkie: "Mxm I'll hit you wena!!"

I hang up while laughing...

It's been long since I last heard from Bakkie... Well not talking to him because I've been receiving my daily amount as promised. One would expect that he would stop but he hasn't.

He sounded different over the phone so I'm convinced that indeed he's changed I just can't wait to see him and how he has changed.

Wow indeed life is unpredictable. Who knew that the man I feared the most would talk to me so nicely.. The man I never wanted to mess up with is now meeting me up for lunch? No one knew.

I just have to find out what he has for me.

Since I'm now going out I wear something nice. Nothing fancy just one of my yellow maternity dresses, accessories and yellow sandals.

I text him the place then continue applying makeup. I don't know why I'm dressing up but today I feel like it. I even spray perfume which is something I don't do anymore. I put on my weave then I'm ready to go.

I take one of the cars and yes I know how to drive. Menziwa comes out and leans on the open window.

Menziwa: "And where is my baby mama going?"

Me: "For some fresh air"

Menziwa: "Mmmh, mind if I tag along?"

Me: "Yes I do mind. I'm actually meeting up with Michael to discuss business"

Menziwa: "Okay then let me not keep you"

Me: "Thank you"

Menziwa: "Drive safely"

Me: "I will"

I drive out...

I just don't like how Menziwa is overprotective of me these days... It's like he's jealous of me or something but who cares... Maybe his wife does.

Just five months left then I'll be out of here!..

I need to be patient... It will be time soon...

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

I hate it here! I hate everything that has got to do with prison!

When is 25 years going to end when I haven't even finished one mere year? I never wanted this to happen. It wasn't my intention to kill him I didn't mean to...

No one has come to visit me ever since I've been arrested. Even my daughter! It's true when they say when days are dark friends are few.

I'm sure Menziwa and his ducks are happy wherever they are seeing that I have been arrested.

I give up on revenge. I give up on life basically I give up on everything. I'll just have to wait until God decides to pull the rope or when these criminals decide to murder me.

I've tried revenge and it worked but the sad thing is that there are three more devils left in Mathapelo's tummy so they didn't feel much pain.

If I wasn't locked up in here I would make sure that they cry for a very long time. What they got is too little compared to what Menziwa made me feel.

I'm just glad for one thing though is that Pamela has disappeared because if not they would add my years and I don't want that... 25 years is a big number on its own so I thank my ancestors for that.

It's been a real struggle getting used to this jail life I won't lie. I don't think I will survive even for a mere year. I'm so heartbroken by this.

I haven't stepped on any one's toes to avoid any alterations with anyone. I don't want trouble then end up getting my years added. I can't jeopardize this. Who am I kidding though? I'm not getting out of here anytime soon so I might as well accept my faith.

I'm lying on my bunker bed reading a newspaper when the guard bangs the steel bars.

Guard: "Makhosazane!! You have a visitor"

I sit up in disbelief.

Guard: "Sheshisa sboshwa!!" (Hurry prisoner!!)

I stand up and he opens up for me.

I'm still surprised that I have a visitor.

I find my daughter waiting for me. Well I didn't expect her to come visit me. I last seen her in court when I was served 25 years with no parole.

I sit across her..

Me: "Baby"

Aphelele: "Don't baby me... I'm not your baby! My mother is dead! I buried her a long time ago!!"

I won't lie. It hurts hearing my daughter speak like that..

Me: "Aphelele I'm sorry my love"

Aphelele: "I'm done preaching and telling you about being a good mother. Well you allowed my father to molest my brother so I have concluded that you never wanted to be a mother to us. Dear mother I will never forgive you for everything that you have put me thru! I will never ever! Prison are small waters for you but I'm just glad you're here than anywhere else. I wanted to let you know that from this day forward you're dead to me. I no longer have a mother. You've lost me as a daughter!

Forever! Enjoy your prison life!! You deserve to be with heartless people like yourself!"

Me: "Baby please"

Aphelele: "Save it"

After saying that she stands up and leaves..

The guard takes me back to my cell.

I never knew my life would be like this... I never knew that my own daughter would bury me alive.

Yes I've felt pain in life but this was the last nail into my coffin.

It's like I'm walking dead... I'm living because we're alive but I'm dead inside. No parent would appreciate those words being said to you. It shows that I deserved them. I deserve everything that's happening in my life right now. I don't have anyone else in the world but myself so if I get out or not life will just be the same for me.

I try to focus but tears fail me. I allow them to fall because it's like I'm making them worse when I keep wiping them.

I hear the other inmates laughing...

Inmates: "Poor Magogo kusedanyani lana salukazi. Uyoze uyeke loko kukhala!!" (Poor grandma it's in prison here grandma. You will cry until you give up)

They continue laughing at me.

If only they knew what I'm going thru..then they wouldn't laugh like this...

My heart is shattered... I can't believe this is happening to me...

A whole Makhosazane... Wow!!

APHELELE (PHEH)

I'm in my bed crying. I'm heart broken. All of this is weighing me down.

This had to be the most difficult thing I had to do. Disowning my mother like that. I've never seen her hurt like that..

I want to forgive her for all the things she had done to me but my mind also can't get over the things she done and said to me.

She didn't think of my feelings when she did and said that to me. She didn't think of how all of those things made me feel about myself. She made me feel useless and unworthy. She made me feel like I didn't deserve to live.

Words are forgiven but not forgotten.

I won't forget everything. I just need time to deal with everything. I need time to deal with what has been happening in my life ever since I started seeing how this life thing works.

I forgave my brother. Not because I didn't love my father but because pain is pain. Pain can change a person.

Tebogo had every reason to feel that way, he had every reason to want to kill with my dad. Dealing with rape is hard. It's even worse for boys because it traumatizes you for the rest of your life...but what am I saying rape is a sensitive topic for everyone. Young or old. It's not nice someone forcing himself on you.

It leaves bad memories that last you for a lifetime. Tebogo saw that as a way to escape my father because my mother was too blind to notice anything. He saw it as a way for him to have his freedom. Maybe it was hard for him to report the matter because he was scared or maybe because my father threatened.. who knew? I wasn't there...

For all of that I forgive him. He didn't kill him though because my mother is the one who finished him off. If she didn't then my father would still be alive.

I'm even ashamed to call that man my father. Hurting another person like that because you're scared coming out with your sexuality. As far as I know Mam'Zulu isn't homophobic so she wasn't going to judge my father if she found out he was gay. I just don't understand why he was scared.



I'm totally against rape so what my father did was totally wrong because I wouldn't like it if anyone did something as bad as that to me.

The way I'm against rape I didn't even attend my father's funeral.. Mam'Zulu understood though... The whole family did.

I made it clear that it's not because I'm supporting him being killed but I'm just against rape. I lost respect for my father even though he's dead and buried but he was not a real man to me, not because he was gay nope but because he ruined someone's childhood for his own fears...

Michael has been with me thru it all.

There's nothing he doesn't know about my life anymore. I've told him everything that's how I trust him, and he's shown me that indeed I can trust him.

Right now I'm lying on my tummy on his bed.

I should consider moving down here because it's clear that I live here most of the time more than my flat...

He is rubbing my back.

Me: "I feel bad Michael"

Michael: "That's normal babe"

Me: "But she has hurt me beyond repair"

Michael: "I know babe but you should have given yourself time"

Me: "I guess you're right. I'll have to think about it some more then decide what I want to do with my mother"

Michael: "Well that's the spirit"

Me: "Michael"

Michael: "Yes my wife"

Me: "Thank you for everything. I really appreciate you"

Michael: "it's my pleasure"

Me: "I want us to try"

Michael: "Huh?"

Me: "This... Us. I want us to try"

Michael: "You can take your time. I'm not rushing you into anything"

Me: "I know but I'm ready to give us a try"

Michael: "Are you sure?"

Me: "Definitely"

Michael: "Thank you MaZulu. You won't regret it. I'm not promising you a perfect relationship. I will mess up but I won't be doing it intentionally. I really love you babe. I won't give up on us only if you won't as well"

Me: "I won't as well. But please understand that I've never dated guys before so this will be something that I'm not used to so please be patient with me"

Michael: "Okay babe"

Me: "Thank you"

Michael: "Can I get some sugar?"

We kissed...

This was the very first time kissing a boy, and it felt good really good.

I felt things that I couldn't explain.

He started rubbing my boob. It felt good. He stopped kissing me.

Michael: "Tell me if I'm making you feel uncomfortable"

Me: "Okay I will tell you"

We continued kissing... It was getting real heated now.

I just let everything happen because I'm still vulnerable...

His hands travel and take off my t-shirt...

To be continued....

BAKKIE

I'm anxious, which is something that I don't come across most of the time. Well yeah sure I do get anxious from time to time or when I'm sharing my story with the congregation but this time around it's different. I'm anxious to meet a woman... but not just any woman. A woman that was working for me when I was still possessed by the devil.

I don't know what are the nerves for but I know that the nerves are there.

Mah: "Just be yourself. It's not a stranger you know"

Me: (sighs) "I know but I'm someone different now from how I used to be. People always react differently to the new me"

Mah: "What I noticed from you it's that you struggle a lot with acceptance. It's like you will die if anyone doesn't accept you. You should struggle if only God can't accept you. Other than that there's nothing you should worry about. Along the way people won't accept you, the devil is going to test your faith only then you'll realize that you don't need people in order to live. You should just do you"

You know people seek advice from pastors but for me I just talk to my mother.

They do say be best friends with your mother and you won't go wrong and indeed the saying is true.

I don't hide anything from my mother concerning my life because mommy knows best. I let everything go thru her because I may think that I am right but in actual fact I'm doing it this life thing the wrong way.

She got me out of my ungodly life so why would she lead me astray now? I'm guessing now you know why her opinion counts most of the time.

I smile...

Me: "You know you're my queen right?"

Mah: (laughing) "Your queen is the girl you're meeting up with"

Me: "Come on Mah! We're not dating"

Mah: "I know you told me that remember?"

Me: "Yes I did but it seems like you keep on forgetting that"

Mah: "I don't"

Me: "Let me leave I don't want to be late"

Mah: "Bye boo mommy loves you"

Me: "I love you more"

I leave the house...

I request a cab. I didn't opt for something fancy because I will not afford it.

Mathapelo suggested that we go to a shisanyama instead, and right now I'm headed there.

The cab drops me off and I walk inside. This place is really nice and organized. The owners did a pretty good job.

There's a carwash on the side then the shisanyama. There are chairs and tables making the place look greater than ever.

There's also a pool table here.

I find Mathapelo already waiting for me. She looks beautiful than the last time I saw her. I'm starting to think maybe I was abusing her because this is not the Mathapelo I know and bossed around.

I sit across her then greet. She has a really beautiful smile more than anything else..

Me: "MaMokoena"

Her: "Bayandiswa I don't think I remember the last time I saw you"

Me: "Small world indeed"

I look at her big tummy...

Me: "Congratulations on your pregnancy by the way"

Her: "Thank you even though I lost one of them"

Me: "Them?"

Her: "Yes I was expecting four kids, miscarried one so now there's three of them"

Me: "Wow... I.. I don't know what to say. I'm sorry for your loss"

Her: "Thank you"

Me: "Some guys know their game though. Who would have thought you'd carry four kids?"

Her: "Yeah hey. You should ask Menziwa to give you tips"

Me: "Wow! Who would have known"

Her: "Yeah that's my life. What's been happening to yours?"

Me: "Well....."

Her jaw is on the floor when I'm done narrating everything to her.

Well that's the reaction I've been getting from everyone so it doesn't amaze me anymore.

Her: "Wow. If I didn't believe in God I would now believe in him because you're proof of that he is indeed alive and powerful"

Me: "I'm actually surprised myself"

The different thing about telling the story to her is that this time around I actually told her everything...even that I once sent someone to kill someone. I'm not proud of that but I just felt like coming clean to her.

After telling her she didn't judge me or anything. I also felt at peace to get this out of my chest. It's like a huge weight has been lifted off my shoulders.

Her: "So I'm just glad I met you. I wanted a meeting with you but didn't know where to get you, I'm guessing God is on my side"

Me: "Ofcourse go on.."

Her: "Well as a changed man I can see that things are rough for you as crime was the only thing you knew so I have a suggestion"

I nod telling her to continue..

Her: "I own this business. The money you have been sending to me for months is part of this. I was just wondering if we could be partners. That would really mean a lot to me"

Me: "Woah wait this place is yours?"



Her: "Yes it is"

Me: "Wow I don't know what to say"

Her: "Just agree to be my partner and help me run this boat"

Me: "Indeed this meet up was worth it. Thank you Mathapelo... Thank you so much. You don't know what this means to me. I don't know what I did to deserve this but thank you very much for your generosity. God will also come thru for you as you did for me... Thank You"

Her: "Well you helped me survive so why not?"

Me: "Wow... I can't believe this!"

Her: "Well you better do. I'm feeling hungry can we order first then after we will deal with the paperwork"

Me: "Well yeah sure why not?"

She lifted her hand and called the waiter over.

I looked at her admiring the self made woman in front of me. Indeed God works wonders if you serve him with your true being.

I didn't think the money I gave to help her out was going to end up helping me instead.

I'm also in awe because of the goodness of her heart. If you're talking about someone with a heart of gold then you're talking about Mathapelo Mokoena.

There aren't a lot of women like her left now

I'm just glad I got to meet her before someone else.

This day is truly blessed... I'm overwhelmed by a lot of good feelings... Wow...

PAMELA MTUKELA

You know I didn't want to disappear into thin air... I had to run away.

Well you would run away as well once you find out that a hardcore gangster is looking for you.

I'm not proud of what I did but she showed me money guys and who could say no to free money? So running away from Menziwa Zulu is definitely worth it and more.

I'm not a heartless person I'm just selfish.

In life I've learned that nobody cares about you other than you so having emotions doesn't work for me. I'm just cold as ice and I don't care really.

I did what I did because I don't get paid enough at work so this was the extra cash I needed.

I was dumb I know for trusting that Makhosazane lady but the money was worth it okay? Just not going to jail.

I just don't know what made them catch me so easily you know.

I heard Makhosazane got arrested... Well now I know why she didn't pay my money back. I'm also wanted by the police and I'm planning to hand over myself soon.

I'm just not sure if Makhosazane was arrested for attempted murder or something out of that category...

The reason why I want to hand over myself is because I don't have nothing else to lose so I'm not afraid of prison... never been.

That's why I relied on Spider because he's the only person that I truly love.

Our relationship has lasted for about two years now, and I couldn't help but fall in love with me.

I know I said my heart is as cold as ice but he managed to melt all of that. I was just sad to leave him like that without any explanation but I had to do it you know. It was for my own sake. Even Spider doesn't know where I am, I can't risk like that.

Y'all are wondering where I am... I'm at another random granny's house not far from where I lived.

I know they won't think I'm still here. They would think I'm already across the country.

Oh don't worry... Nothing a gun can't scare the living lights out of an old person, so you don't have to worry about her snitching on me.

The house is old... Not the type of houses I would go for but what choice do I have... I'm a WANTED criminal.

I don't want to talk about what happened to my family and all of that because that's a part of my life I fear revisiting.

The granny is now used to me living her because I got my own room now. She isn't that old maybe 65 years old... something like that.

I'm just glad for that because I can't imagine the horror of living with someone that you fear. I told her I won't have to kill her if she does as I tell her so I guess that did the trick. I'm now like a daughter to her...which I find really awkward for someone who never got love from anyone.

I'm busy plaiting my cornrows when my phone indicates an incoming message.

I got rid of my old phone since I know they would track it. I got a new one. It isn't expensive like the one I used to carry but as long as I can still be active on WhatsApp I don't mind.

I have a new SIM card and only my best friend from the house has my number.

It's a video. I download it....

Oh wow I can't believe it. Pearl has been sleeping with my man all along!! I knew it!!

How could Spider do that to me!? But what am I saying.. that girl seduced him!!

Gran knocks on my door...

Her: "Food is ready"

Me: "Okay I'm coming!!"

I smile a little...

Well somebody wants to die I can see...

Well then if that's the case let the games begin....

PEARL

My babe has made a picnic for us.

One thing that's nice about dating Spider is that when he spoils you... He makes sure you are spoilt rotten...

I'm just glad I got my claws deep in his heart and I'm just glad he feels me otherwise I would be saying something different now.

Picnics are usually done at the park in day time but with ours is different.

Spider is very stubborn you know. I told him we could do it tomorrow since it's late now but what did he do? He made the set up anyway... I just don't know what's the rush honestly...

We are having picnic under the moonlight.

He didn't want to make the girls uncomfortable so we booked in the most expensive hotel.

This night is that special to him I guess...

He keeps glancing at me with his eyes sparkling with love...

Indeed he is in love with me... That I'm sure off.

After eating we just lie on our backs the face the sky. The stars are beautiful to watch.... They are twinkling and what not...

Music is playing but it's not too loud to a point where we can't hear each other ... It's just the right volume...

Everything is in place... The person who loves me is here with me. Treating me like a Queen that I am so what more would I want? Nothing...

I'm just hoping this night never ends...

He really payed for him to pull this off because we aren't disturbed by anyone...

Spider gave clear instructions that if we want something we will tell them, other than that we're still good...

He asks me to stand up and I gladly do...

I'm wearing my favorite dress tonight.

It's a boob tubed red sparkling dress that has a slit on my left thigh... with a matching bag and heels. I really went all out...

I took off my heels I'm now barefoot.

He kneels on one knee then look at me straight into my eyes...

Him: "Ever since you came into my life everything changed. You changed me. Well I'm not a man of many words I prefer showing my love with actions as I have been doing for a while now. Babe I love you... To the moon and back... To infinity and beyond. You're my Queen.. only you my love. With that I want to ask you to marry me..."

He takes out the most expensive and beautiful engagement ring I've ever seen. It's something unique and rare.

I couldn't stop myself I shed a few tears of joy. It's been a while since I got those...

Me: "Babyyyyyyy.... Thank you my love. Yes I do I will marry you"

He spins me around while kissing me. This moment feels right. Everything just feel in place...

We get back and sit down. I'm laying on his chest. This feels really nice. I don't want this moment to be gone. I will cherish this day as long as I live.

Yes I may not love him but love will find me along the way...

I hear someone coming to us...

I see Spider rolling his eyes. He has his back against the door leading to where we are.

Him: "I thought I told everyone that we don't want to be disturbed"

Voice: "Oh I won't be long my love"

My palms sweat immediately. I know this voice. This is...this is Pamela...

We both quickly stand up when we realize who is she...

We both freeze when we see her carrying a gun. I'm really scared of guns, so I won't do anything stupid.

In my mind I'm just wondering how the hell did she get in with that gun but with a criminal like her you may never know...

Her: "Wonderful speech my love. It would be really lovely if it was for me"

Spider: "Pamela! Where have you been?!"



Pamela: "Oh so you're worrying about that now?! That's really nice of you"

She is dressed up and dolled up just like me. She is wearing the same clothes as mine but the only difference is that hers are black in color and that she has a thinner body than I do other than that we're wearing the same thing.

Pamela: "Congratulations guys but I guess you will get married in heaven"

Spider: "Pamela I know you're a psycho but don't do this please! Pearl didn't do anything I'm the one who approached her! She's got nothing to do with this!!"

Pamela: "You know I'm the one that helped you to get this job and you do me like this?! I trusted you!!"

Spider: "Pamela please..."

Pamela: "Shut up just shut up!! Listen here if it's not me then it's not anyone. There are five bullets in here! I'm going to kill your fiance you understand me?! Then you will marry me instead!!"

Me: "That's madness!! You know what it's fine I'll leave. Spider you can take back your ring and everything that belongs to you. I'm even moving out. You guys can have each other it's fine"

I was saying that out of fear...

Spider: "No babe! Pamela is wrong here. She's a psycho!! She needs help!! Serious help!!"

Pamela: "No I don't! I don't want to talk too much! I just want to kill this bitch then get over it already!! Much time has been wasted!!"

She points the gun at me. I pee on myself, that's how terrified I am....

Spider: "Don't do this please!!"

He tries to stand in front of me but she shoots him on his leg and he falls down.

It finally dawns to me that indeed she is serious. My heart starts beating fast... I can't die now...

But who am I kidding I'm dying today. This psycho is going to kill me...

I just want my mother...

I shed a few tears. I guess this is the end of Pearl Edward....

The gun goes off four times... I just close my eyes... Feeling the bullets going straight into my body. The feeling is surreal and everything is happening in slow motion in my head...

The last face that I see is that of a person I caused pain to forgetting how she helped me.

Everything goes blank before I can even look at Spider.

It's lights out....

To be continued....

\*\*\*\*\*

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

\*\*\*\*\*

58

THREE YEARS LATER....

MAKHOSAZANE ZULU

They kept beating her up... I watched as she begged for them to stop but they didn't...

How could they when I haven't told them to stop beating her up...

No one messes with me then expect everything to be okay... You can't do that.

I stepped on the bud on the cigarette.. I raised my hand and they stopped beating her up...

Me: "You know you're dump for a smart girl like you"

She was still trying to catch her breath so she couldn't reply.

Me: "Talk maan damnit!!"

Pamela: "I....I'm.... I'm sorry. I really am"

Me: "Your sorry won't take back the 10 years the judge gave me!! It won't!! You should have stayed where you are!! When am I going to get out tell me when?! You ruined my life!!"

Pamela: "You ruined your own life!! I didn't say poison someone... I just didn't!! You're the one who asked me to do it!"

Me: "But I didn't say confess!"

Pamela: "Argh you've telling me that for the past three years now don't you get tired?"

Me: "No I don't! Three years later this thing still makes me angry!"

Pamela: "Deal with it then because you ain't getting out of here!! You're stuck just like me!! But look on the bright side I'm also going to spend 35 years in here so we got each other!"

Me: "Oh wow...but look on the bright side you'll pay for confessing until we both get out"

Pamela: "You get more years then and I get to rest in peace once you kill me so it's fine by me"

Me: "Argh!! I hate you right now!!"

Pamela: "I know right? I hate myself as well"

I looked at the inmates...

Me: "Just get her out of here"

They dragged her to the toilets...

Three years later I'm still not used to jail. This place is depressing.. it's not for the weak! You'll die if you are weak.

There are things that people don't know about prison... It breaks you. You just don't have a choice but to be the devil because it's the only thing you got to do in order to survive.

I've killed to get where I am today, I've been hospitalized... I've been raped... I've raped.. I was almost killed. I've done drugs.. I even sell them now.

Well that's just half of the things I've went through.

Pamela got in jail just after me. She was arrested for murder then confessed about the attempted murder we did on Mathapelo.

10 years was added on my sentence I got depressed even more.

Who wouldn't be depressed... I still have 32 years to go.

Nobody has visited me all these three years. I don't blame them though it's not like I expected them to come visit me.

Menziwa arrived though, once. He wasn't visiting me he was just here to rejoice about my downfall. To make sure that I was indeed arrested and will not get out anytime soon.

I haven't seen my children for over three years now... It's hard I won't lie. Knowing that they are alive somewhere and not with me shatters my soul. Aphelele is 24 years old now. I don't know what she's doing in her life right now but I know she's done

something good for herself and I know that she deserves it after everything we have put her through.

I've been writing to her every month and she doesn't reply to my letters. Now I could see that she was indeed right when she said she has buried me alive. I don't exist anymore in her life. I wish I could make amends to her and make her see that it wasn't my intention u didn't mean to hurt her like that. I just want her to forgive me...

My son. Sighs. I don't know what's happening in his life.

I don't pray yes but I do pray for my son's safety. I don't know what he is dealing with but since we are both in prison I know that we both have endured the same treatment. As long as I haven't heard that he is dead then I'm good.

I'm just hoping that he's okay wherever he is. He doesn't have a choice but to remain strong.

Best believe me when I say that I have finished my part on this Earth.

If I was a good mother to my child all of this could have been prevented, I would not be in prison right now. All the life I tried to build for me just came crushing down on me.

If I was there for my kids, maybe just maybe life would have been better for all of us.

If I wasn't busy trying to save other people's lives instead of saving my son's I wouldn't be here... If I actually noticed that my husband that I held dear in my heart was busy crushing my happiness's life and pride, then all of this would have been prevented very easily...

I'm just praying that my daughter doesn't turn out to be like me and actually becomes a good parent to her kids if she decides to have them in future...I just don't want her to turn out like me. I just hope I didn't ruin her so bad to make her don't want to have kids.

Pamela was right...indeed she's the only person that I have left in my life because we both don't have anyone outside prison... Even if I do get out it will be useless...

I wish to have a chance though... To at least apologize to Aphelele for all the pain I've caused her. Even if I die the next person I would die without guilt.

I don't deserve to be alive... I've killed. A person is six feet under because of me...well make that two if you count Mathapelo's child..not counting the inmates I've killed also. My sins are just too big to forget.

I'll just have to wait for my dying day because I don't have a use in the world other than that I destroy everything I come in contact with...



I'm just hoping when my son comes out of prison he will come see me cause I know his sentence was better than mine...

My story has come to an end. Nothing more will happen to me other than death because I know I ain't getting out of here...

There's no tears left to cry. I just have to live with it. To live with the fact that this is my life until the end of time...

This is where me and all the criminals in the world belong.

Maybe you'll hear from me again in the future you'll never know but for now my story has come to an end...

I smile as I think of all the good things that has happened in my life... At least I've lived even though it's all over now...

When God decides that my time has come then I'll be waiting for him here in my bunker bed....

TEBOGO MOHLAKOANA

I let the water run on my bums. It's just like adding salt to an open wound because the pain becomes worse. I flinch as the warm water make their way to the hole in my behind.

The pain numbs your whole body you can even think of committing suicide that's how severe it is...

Being raped is the mother of all pain there is in the world...

I'm the victim of it so believe me.

It breaks you into something that you cannot recognize... It deforms you into this monster that you never thought was living in you...

Pig and his pals were moved into another prison so I got a little break... Then I was moved to another cell as well which made things worse because Jason sent out word for me to be raped and that's exactly what's been happening since I got into my new cell...

It's better when they have someone else to rape or when a new person from the outside arrives because they will all want "fresh meat" and leave us since we're regulars... That's the only time I don't experience this inhumane act...

One would expect that I would have got used to it right now but everytime it feels brand new from the box, it would feel like the very first time Menzi Zulu penetrated me...

The pain never gets old it just gets worse everyday because you feel less of a man everytime it happens..

Jason was not behaving so he was moved to another prison. I'm honestly happy about that even though I know I will still get raped...

Bella is back as well. I see her in my dreams with blood oozing from her chest... She's carrying I'm guessing our child... She's also crying blood. Every night in my dreams I see this

traumatizing figure... It's like she isn't resting in peace and I don't think she'll let me go because I was also there when she was killed, I actually helped Jason cover for her murder. If I was outside I would get help but since I'm in here there's nothing I can do...

I'm cursed. Not that I'm thinking it but KaMangethe came to visit me and told me that she is behind all of my misfortunes because I failed to pay her back her money.. that's why I have bad luck. I'm thinking that's also why Bella is visiting me in my dreams... I honestly need help but I won't get any since I'm here and not out there.

I would say I'm getting used to this life because I'm afraid it's the only thing that I have to do.

In a situation like this you've got no choice but to accept and live with the current situation...it's the only thing that can make you survive prison.

Crying about it won't make it feel better but it will make it worse... You may even sunk into depression because of thinking too much and you don't certainly need depression in prison..

If I didn't have anything else to live for then I would have got myself killed on purpose but because I still need to get out of here and see my new family then I still have something to look forward to on the outside.

Three years is too long to be still crying over spilt milk..

Aphelele and I are trying to fix our broken relationship. It was hard at first but now it's much better compared to how we started... She's the only person who's been visiting me ever since I got arrested. Visits stopped when she relocated but now since it's back we will continue from where we left off.

She's engaged now and even has a baby girl, Nozibusiso... I'm also surprised myself that she ended up with a guy... It's proof that indeed anything can change.

Nozibusiso is what makes me have patience so that when I get out of prison I will get a chance to see her.

She's very beautiful... She has my nose. I've seen her in pictures in Aphelele's phone. I would really love to meet her some day but I know I will...

Just seven years left. I know it's a lot but patience is virtue...

I'm even proud to say I have a sister now. Something I was ashamed of years ago but now she's the best thing that has ever happened to me and I'm glad she is with me throughout... She promised and Aphelele keeps her promises...

I won't lie I miss my mother. Yes she is all of the bad things that you can think of but also I can't run away from the fact that she's my mother... She gave birth to me.. that's one thing that I can't run away from...

I start washing my body then Sbu walks in. He's one of the inmates that protect me sometimes when they try to molest me.

Sbu: "Finish up we're playing cards on the beds"

Me: "Let me finish up here"

Sbu: "Sho Budda Lami"

Me: "I know it's little but I appreciate you protecting me even if it's not an everyday thing"

Sbu: "Don't worry about it. I'll also need your help someday. We need to help each other"

Me: "Thanks man"

Sbu: "You're welcome. Now hurry up!!"

Me: "I'm coming".

I'm still glad that there are people like Sbu left in the world otherwise I wouldn't have survived.

Seven is a long time updating you guys about what's happening in here... It's the usual you know so you've got nothing to worry about.

I'm looking forward to seeing my niece when I get out since she's the only thing that my heart yearns for...other than that I'm just okay with everything.

I need to take it one day at a time then I'll be good. I will not step on anybody's toes since I still want to live.

Nozibusiso this is for you my baby... Uncle Tebogo is doing this for you...

I finish up with everything then go to play cards.

I'm just glad that it's still daytime because the night time is what I'm scared of. Everything comes to live at night...

I'm just hoping my mind will be strong with me in order for us to survive this...

This is beyond any human being... It takes very strong mento survive this but what choice do we have we made our beds now we have to sleep on them...

No one runs away from the law and actually manages... Even the most feared criminals Jason, are here with us because they think they're too smart but once you're caught you become dumb...

Your world goes blank once you're inside...

I'm just hoping I survive this...

This is the last battle I have to conquer... I hope I manage...

MENZIWA ZULU

Even after three years I'm still very much in love with the mother of my kids.

Roll your eyes all you want but it's the truth and the heart wants what it wants...there's nothing you could actually do about it.

It's too late now, she's already seeing someone so there's nothing I could do so I just have to swallow that love I have for her and continue living in my boring marriage.

Being married to Zandile (MaShezi) is starting to get to me because she depends on me for everything. Why can't she be like Mathapelo? Be independent like her?

What bores me the most is the fact that she doesn't look after her body as she was in the beginning. She is becoming more ugly each passing year... I just feel like vomiting to be honest.

She should ask for tips from Mathapelo the next time she comes to fetch the babies.

Speaking of babies my princesses were born. They're three years and a few months old now. They are really troublesome if you ask me...little rascals but I love them to the moon and back. I would rather die than to have someone take them away from me. They are the only thing that makes me see Mathapelo often because without them we wouldn't be speaking.

Mathapelo named them Luncumo, Olwami and Oluhle... It's like saying Luncumolwamoluhle..

My mother named them Bekumele, Kwenzeke and Okungentando...

Their names are like a chain. Their incomplete without each other just like how my kids are... They are incomplete without each other...

After their sister I named them..

Kukhuseliwe, Khuseh and Khuseliwe... They're almost the same I know...

They are traitors though... I was looking forward to them being boys...but argh what can we say? Traitors are traitors...

Last year we renewed our vows with Zandile even though I didn't want to anymore since I'm not feeling her like I used to but since I actually got her to agree I had to make it happen which is something I regret doing because honestly I want out now... It's emotionally draining.

Besides that everything has been going well on my side, I ain't complaining.

We are co-parenting with Mathapelo. I was against her living with my kids with her man but I'm also married so that was unfair so I didn't have a choice but to agree.



Bayandiswa is a church going man so I'm not afraid of what could happen if he was left alone with my kids... I trust him that much.

I retired from running all my businesses. I'm too old now. I'm even a grandfather now so I just have to let other people do the hard work for me, even though I still get all the money as it is. It's my legacy for my kids. Lily is currently the acting CEO... Lily being my first born and I trust her...

She is her father's daughter anyway.

Aphelele relocated for one and a half year to study in KZN...then trained for six months. She was doing Public Management. During that time in KZN she met someone, a guy... Lucky enough they are now engaged and have a one year old baby, uNozibusiso. She's the apple of my eye that one. My first granddaughter...

After finishing her studies she moved down here and I'm very much proud of her and the woman she is.

She's now looking for a job but I heard she will look for it after her wedding which is happening in a month. I'm so happy for her to be honest...

Right now I'm getting ready to go attend a parent's meeting at Luncumolwamoluhle 's daycare.

It's a very organized creche so they want both parents.

It's Saturday so the kids won't be at school... A perfect day since most parents aren't working today...

Since my mother won't be available to look after the baby since she is going to the stokvel meeting we don't have a choice but to go with them. I don't want to bother Zandile to be honest. We would leave them with Bayandiswa but he's visiting his mother at a mental hospital...

I've asked her to dress the girls up. After finishing up I go to the main house so we could wait for Mathapelo to come and fetch us

I find them still not ready. It's like they are not going anywhere because they are wearing their usual clothes. It looks like they are singing their daycare songs with Zandile which I don't think I know by the way...

Me: "Guys why aren't you dressed up?"

Luncumo: "Mommy says we are staying"

Me: "Zandile?"

MaShezi: "I figured since you guys will be attending the meeting you won't have time for the girls since you know how they could be so I will babysit them you guys can go"

Me: "Are you sure?"

MaShezi: "100%. I need time to bond with them you know"

Me: "I heard Luncumo calling you mommy why?"

MaShezi: "Oh. I'm also their mother since we're both married so I don't want them to feel awkward around me. I didn't think it would be a problem"

Me: "They have their own mother so I don't want you to confuse them. It was right when they were calling you their aunt"

MaShezi: "Oh I'm sorry"

Me: "Don't do it again"

MaShezi: "I won't"

Me: "Thank you"

The door bell rings. I go get it. It's Mathapelo as expected. I'm welcomed by her most expensive perfume. Her business is very successful now that explains why she is more beautiful and takes herself more now. I would hug her but with my wife here I won't.

Mathapelo: "Menziwa"

Me: "Mawabo"

Mathapelo: "Can I come in?"

Me: "Yes ofcourse"

I move out of the way so she can get in. She looks at the kids who are very much dirty then gives me a questioning look. I really get turned on when she does that.

Me: "MaShezi said she will babysit while we got to the parent's meeting"

Mathapelo: "Since when does she babysit?"

Me: "She's trying to help"

Mathapelo: "That's awkward but thanks Zandile"

MaShezi: "I'm glad I could help you guys"

Mathapelo: (clears throat) "Let's go then I have a meeting after. Bye girls mommy loves you"

The girls: "We love you too mommy"

Me: "I love you guys"

The girls: "We love you too daddy"

MaShezi: "I love you babe"

Me: (clears throat) "I....I love you too"

I open the door and we go outside. Mathapelo is the one who's driving. After driving out of the yard she speaks...

Mathapelo: "I find it really weird as to why your wife suddenly wants to babysit since she wasn't for the past three years"

Me: "Let's give her a chance please"

Mathapelo: "If you say so then... I just hope I won't regret it. I don't trust her"

Me: "I know but just this once"

Mathapelo: "Okay then"

Me: "Thank you"

Maybe MaShezi has accepted my children that's why I'm giving her a chance to prove herself that indeed we can trust her.

I also agreed because I get a chance to be alone with Mathapelo without his man and the kids. Maybe she can reconsider and decide to take me back into her life...

I've been yearning for this moment for while now... I finally got it...

I'm just looking forward to this day...

We continue having small talks... Driving really suits her...

I can already see her driving my car....

To be continued....

## APHELELE (PHEH)

I'm out going for dress fitting. I really can't believe that I'm going to get married to the love of my life, Michael.

I didn't find someone new or anything...after that faithful night in which I gave in we fell more and more in love. Yes all couples fight but with us it's like we're dating for the very first time.

Who knew that loving a guy is so much nice?.. The love that you get... I was really missing out busy chasing girls and all of that. I wasn't born a guy anyway.. I took a choice to be a guy at the age of 17 in high school and seven years later I'm engaged to be someone's wife.

I'm glad to say I'm not lesbian anymore. That chapter of my life has been closed and closed forever. I'm never looking at girls and wish they could date me. That was the old me. Now I'm Nozibusiso's mother.

Never ever have I thought I'd have a child but here I am with a one year old baby. She's my first love. She is the one who showed me that indeed I'm a woman.

I was scared because I thought I wouldn't be a good mother because of what my mother did to me... I was thinking that maybe I would give the same treatment to my child but it turns out she's the love of my life. I would die for my child.

I just don't get how my mother hated me because I don't see any hate that I have for Nozibusiso. I am promising myself though, to not neglect my child...be there for her whenever she needs me. Through thick and thin. I want her to be able to trust me. I want her to make me her best friend. I don't want to be the feared mother and all of that. I want my child to grow up into something wonderful, that we will be proud of as her parents. In all my daughter's life I want God to lead me, to actually show me the right way to raise her.

Argh I'm being extra now anyway nothing much actually happened on the last three years.

First Pearl died. Yes, she was shot by her boyfriend's girlfriend more than once. At first I couldn't believe it but when I saw the coffin and all of that it finally sunk to me that indeed Pearl is no more, she has left us.

Yes she was everything but she was a part of me. My first love so I won't lie and say I rejoiced but as I am a human as well I cried.

To this day I just can't believe that I won't see her annoying ass ever again.

The girlfriend was arrested and the guy committed suicide after so it's a sad ending for all of them..

The following year I relocated to KZN. Michael being Michael followed me. Like who does that? He actually quitted his job at Mathapelo's carwash. That's how much he was willing to sacrifice for me...

Well he was stubborn so there's nothing I could do about it. He said "There's no way I'm letting my wife go and meet new people in KZN never!". So that's how we ended up in KZN together.

I studied Public Management and got my qualifications. He then got me pregnant. We then got engaged. I then trained for six months and decided to stay at home, told the family I will see working after the wedding. In actual fact I'm not working a day in my life. Michael said he won't allow it.

Speaking of him when we came back to Gauteng he decided to take over in the family business. Oh trust me I didn't know as well that his family had businesses.

Now since Nozibusiso is a year old we have decided to get married. We don't want something big just a small intimate wedding. We're getting married in a month. I really wish my brother would come over... It's just a wish I know it won't happen.

I have forgiven him. I long forgave him and I did that out of a pure heart. He didn't deserve any of that. My brother's life is



really hard you know so I understand. I don't wish rape on my worst enemy. Our bond is now stronger than ever there's nothing I wouldn't do for him. He's the only family that I have.

Makhosazane. Sighs. I haven't spoken to her since the last day I went to confront her. Michael has been talking about forgiveness and not only for that person but for your own peace of mind and it really got me thinking that I need to forgive her. I don't want to rush things so I will wait till I'm finally ready to face her and then forgive her.

I've been getting her letters. I couldn't reply to them... Something in me just didn't want to. The letters went on for a while then suddenly stopped. That was one thing that scared me, but since the prison hasn't called me then I'm good. I just need more time.

I'm here with my mother in-law who is white by the way. Sasha who is my friend I met in collage who's also my maid of honor. Then my baby girl.

I don't have many bridesmaids cause I don't have any friends since I was friends with boys. Many of them come from family then Mathapelo.

I went for a ball gown. It really looks good on me. Michael will go crazy. It has sparkles all over. It's a boob tubed dress though. I didn't want to be like I'm old. Meanwhile I'm just young.

I'm standing in front of the mirror looking at myself, this is me.

Amber: "You look really beautiful my daughter"

Me: "Thank you mother"

Michael's mother told me that I should just call her by her name, Amber. I couldn't so I settled to call her mother. She is a very chilled person, she doesn't have drama. I really like her, I can see she won't give me any problems.

I look at myself once more indeed I really looked beautiful.

Amber gets away from us to answer a phone call. We are in one of the boutiques. Amber suggested it. She is even willing to pay for all the things in going to need as a bride.

She comes back after a while...

Amber: "Pheh dear, after here your fiance said he will come fetch you so won't return with us"

Me: "Okay mother"

Sasha: "Argh friend you look gorgeous"

Me: "Thank you babe"

Assistant: "So what are you saying? Do you like it?"

Me: "Yes I do"

They all clapped their hands.

Me: "Well let's go change I don't want to keep my husband waiting"

We all laughed, and I went to change....

MATHAPELO (PELO)

The meeting at the daycare took really long. Long to a point where I had to cancel my meeting at work.

Menziwa was right we wouldn't have managed if we brought the kids with us, it was going to be one big mess if you ask me.

Well... After that day with Bakkie we couldn't get away from each other. Until we decided to give it a try until that try took us to where we are today.

I really love him. He has changed a great deal. I thought he was just joking but indeed it was the truth. He's such a wonderful man.

Last night he proposed because I'm pregnant. Don't look at me like that.

I took off my ring because I didn't want the kids to see it. I want to tell them when we are home and not here at the Zulu resident.

I've never had someone who was really serious about me because Menziwa was serious but then got distracted along the

way so I'm really grateful for Bayandiswa to be committed to me and me alone. That makes me so happy I don't want to lie.

In the past few years nothing much happened. My best friend whom I had a crush on died, Pearl. I was left heartbroken. I'm still not over it I have just learned to live with it and make peace with everything.

My business was recognized and it has gotten very busy. I decided to name the shisanyama "KwaKhuselo" to remember my baby.

Bakkie didn't seem to mind...

The business is booming so much that we have started another branch in another place. Bayandiswa is going to run that one while I continue running KwaKhuselo. So far so good everything is just coming together perfectly. My life is going great.

We got our own house, cars, business and our kids what more could I want? I'm a happy woman.

Menziwa has been awfully quite ever since I told him about my engagement and also that I'm pregnant.

I don't know what he's thinking but he seems angry but I don't care really. I'm the mother of his kids nothing more or less. He's just being childish about this whole thing.

Also he knows very well not to take my kids away from me because I'll rain terror on him. I'll just take him to court should he try anything stupid.

In his mind he still thinks that we are going to get back together which is something that won't happen. I'm not going back to him! I'm so happy where I am. I don't certainly need him. We're done and for good. If he really wants me he should opt for witchcraft cause in my right mind I won't. It's like taking ten steps backwards when getting back with him. I've came a long way to go back now. He should just love his wife with the love he wanted to give me, it will do him good.

We drive in total silence until we arrive at his home.

I park then get out. I told him the kids will be spending the weekend with me I will bring them back Monday after work. They will travel that side to go to school.

The plan is to tell them about the engagement and the new additional member that is still being baked in the oven. By the way I'm a month pregnant.

I get out of the car and he takes his time.

I don't bother knocking I just let myself in. I shout for my kids and I get no response. I go all over the house looking for them and I don't find anyone...even MaShezi. When I get back to the

kitchen Menziwa is looking at me with eyes full of tears with a letter in his hand. My knees go weak. No!

Me: (swallows) "What's that?"

Menziwa: "I don't know but it's a letter. I found it on the table"

Me: "Read it!"

Menziwa: "Okay. It goes like this....

Dear love of my life... And your baby mama.

I have taken your kids to where you can't reach. I'm sorry but I had to do it. It angered me seeing my husband love Mathapelo more than me. It broke me into a million pieces to see him fall more in love with her each and everyday. He loves her so much even when love making he calls her name. He even dreams of her and that shatters my soul.

I took your kids because I want you to feel the pain that I feel when seeing the love of my life loving you wena Mathapelo!  
Witch!

I guess realizing that I took your kids you can hear a sharp pain across your heart that's what I was feeling dear so enjoy it. Some would say kids are innocent but this time around Luncumolwamoluhle are the main source of my pain. If it wasn't for them I would have had my happily ever after.

Oh even if you call the police you won't find me. Nobody will and nobody knows where I am. I'm still deciding what to do with these three devils. How I wish they died with Khuselo I would be dancing right now. Even if you want me to change my mind you won't be able to contact me cause I'm gone. Gone with your kids!! You can now get married to each other in peace! I don't care!!

Ngiyakuthanda Myeni Wami (I love you my husband). Take care of yourself. Tell that witch you call a mother to go to hell!!

Love: Your psycho wife... Zandile Zulu in brackets MaShezi.

A cheetah never changes it's spots..."

When he is done reading the letter I feel light headed. I feel defeated. Why would Zandile do this to me?! I don't even love her husband!!

I hate myself for thinking she was genuine all along! Never trust kind people! They are sometimes two faced.

I'm hurting really hurting. I don't know what that psycho could do with my kids right now! I even regret trusting her...look at where that trust landed me! I'm disappointed in myself I won't lie.

I'm really trying to stay strong not for me but for the kid growing inside of me. I don't want to miscarry, I can't afford to miscarry. I can't afford that much pain!

Oh Nkosiyami! Luncumolwamoluhle..

My kids! No pain can be like this one! Thinking about it just shutters my soul even more.

I won't see my kids ever again? I just cry, but what's the use. They are never coming back! Izithandwa zikamama.

I want to scream and shout at Menziwa but I'm too defeated to do that. I don't have the energy.

I just sit down on the cold tiles on the floor and start crying. What am I supposed to do now? Tell me!

I hate being helpless because it makes feel useless.

I should have known that this witch wanted to run away with my kids! I trusted her!! My mind is spinning because of what I just heard. Maybe someone will come with cameras and tell me it was all a joke...but who am I kidding? This is no joke.

My kids are gone.

Menziwa is crying out loud sitting on the floor just like me! I'm also crying silently.

I don't want to go back to that dark pit that I was in... It's just not nice. It's painful. It's like your soul is detaching from your body.



I reach for my bag then take out my phone. I need to call my fiancée.

It rings for a while.

I don't know where I will start when explaining everything to him....

BAYANDISWA (BAKKIE)

I walked into the room. She was sitting on the bed facing the window. It was hurting me seeing her like that. It shattered my soul that my world is right here locked up like a monster.

Her hand was bandaged. The nurse told me she hurt herself trying to escape. One hand was tied to the bed. That hurt me more.

Me: "Mother"

MaZwane: "Baby"

Me: "How are you today?"

MaZwane: "I'm fine. Why am I tied?"

Me: (clears throat) "Umhh... You tried to escape"

MaZwane: "Bayandiswa I'm not crazy right?"

Me: "No mother you are not. You are a warrior of God"

MaZwane: "Oh no! She's here Pearl is here!! Bayandiswa help me!!"

She started crying uncontrollably. She looked really scared like she can see Pearl in front of her. This was disturbing. She was trying to rip the belts that were holding her in place apart.

The nurse walked in with an injection...

Nurse: "Please get out"

Me: "What's happening?"

Nurse: "Mr Zwane please get out"

Me: "Okay but will she be okay?"

Nurse: "She will be fine"

I got out and gave them some space.

My mother hasn't been okay ever since the passing of Pearl. It messed her up so bad that she started seeing her in her dreams. It just got worse to a point where we took her to the hospital. The mental hospital to be specific and she has been there for two and a half year now.

Life without her has been really hard. This is what happens when you lose someone who was everything to you.

If I didn't have Mathapelo by my side I don't know what would I do...

Ever since my mother was taken away J.R ran away from home. He has become a hobo. He's now into drugs and doing all the wrong things he isn't supposed to do. This thing affected him more. Not that it didn't affect me but I stayed strong because I had God by my side. If it wasn't for the living God I would have sunk into depression or worse end up like J.R.

I have tried everything there is in the book to help my brother but he doesn't want any help and nothing that I've tried has worked. I've given up but spiritually I'm praying God reaches out to him. To heal him tell him it wasn't his fault that our mother landed in a mental hospital. That it wasn't his fault Pearl died. That's my wish.

I had no choice but to remain strong not just for me but for my family as a whole since I'm now the structure of it.

Life with Mathapelo has been totally amazing. She is an amazing woman and I wish to keep her and our kids forever.

One would say I'm pretending that I have accepted Luncumolwamoluhle but I'm not. I genuinely love those kids. They are my first borns and my first lovers. I would move the mountains for them.

I take them as my own kids.

Since I'm also going to be a father that doesn't mean I will neglect them nah I won't do that. I will treat them the same way because they are all my kids.

Menziwa makes me uncomfortable though. Even a blind person could see that he still has feels for my fiancée. Not that I don't trust my wife. I just don't trust Menziwa. My fiancée assured me though that nothing brings them together besides kids so I trust her.

She would never do me like that. I have our whole life planned ahead.

As I get out of the hospital I receive a call from her.

Me: "Hello"

I hear sniffing. My mood changes instantly. Who dares makes my future wife cry? I hate hearing her sniff like this. I'd rather hear her shout at me for forgetting that Olwami doesn't eat pizza.

Me: "Mamakhe what happened?"

Mathapelo: "Please come KwaZulu"

Me: "Okay I'm on my way babe"

Mathapelo: "Come please"

Me: "I love you mfazi Wami"

Mathapelo: "I love you more babe"

I hang up then go to my car.

Ever since Mathapelo came into my life everything changed. We now run a business together and I thank the heavens for such a great wife.

I'm just sad Pearl had to die without making peace with my mother.

Some may think that I'm not hurting. I am hurt but I had no choice but to live with it.

Pearl's death also took away Spider from me because after her death he committed suicide. He couldn't live with himself. Their story was too twisted, so I understand.

I'm speeding too fast because I know wherever my wife is I know she's hurting.

As I'm speeding I don't see that the traffic light is red and find myself bumped into another car that was still waiting for the traffic light to turn green.

I touch my head and my hand comes back with blood.

I can feel myself getting dizzy.

My phone rings and I answer. I feel like I'm running out of breath...

Mathapelo: "Babe where are you?"

Me: "I love you"

Mathapelo: "Babe what's happening?"

I cough out blood. I can see everyone running around trying to get help. My head feels heavy so I can't lift it up, but my whole body hurts. I smile...

Me: "Remember yesterday I proposed to you, you said you are mine forever?"

Mathapelo: (crying) "Babe I need you right now! Please come"

Me: "I know my love I'm coming home to you. I just want you to know that I love you babe... And (coughs) and... please name our baby Mcebisi...yes Mcebisi"

Mathapelo: "No! What's happening?! Where are you?!"

Me: "I'm on my way. Ngiyakuthanda Mamakhe. Please find J.R for me"

Mathapelo: "Babe! I love you more but please come I need you"

Me: "Let me rest a bit babe. Let me rest. When I'm done resting I'll come to you"

I hear sirens...

Mathapelo: "Babakhe"

The phone falls off my hand. I smile and rest a bit. My eyes feel heavy.

I will go to Mathapelo when I'm done resting....

I need to rest a bit....

To be continued...

## FINAL CHAPTER

PAMELA MTUKELA

I hate living like this. If I could turn back the hands of time I would because this is not life that I am meant to live.

If I knew how prison would be like I would have never shot Pearl. I regret everything that I did.

Sacrificing all the years I have left in my life for someone who would kill himself for a girl?

Spider didn't love me... He loved Pearl.

I just wish someone told me that before hand. Maybe I would have not sacrifice myself like that. I'm such a stupid when it comes to love.

Spider left a note that states why he committed suicide. He said he can't live with the guilt of someone being death because of him. He didn't have to commit suicide though...I'm the one who killed Pearl not me. I'm the one to blame and I'm paying for it right now.

When will I actually finish 35 years while I'm still 25 years of age? This is hell on Earth I'm telling you.



Think before you do anything...

I just wish I learnt that earlier...

Makhosazane is going to make my life hell in here... because I confessed.

The reason why I confessed is because I couldn't go down alone...

Like it or not Menziwa was going to come forward with evidence that indeed I was the one poisoned Mathapelo's food.

I regret killing her baby as well. If I could get a chance I would apologize because I hate it when the sun sets because that's when the devil comes out to play...

I always hear baby cries when I try to sleep. They are piercing so much that when the baby cries you can feel your eyes ringing.

After about an hour of the baby cries, Pearl comes to live with a belt. She hits me until the sun rises again the next morning.

My body is aching and I'm always tired but what can I do or say? I'm the one who brought this upon myself. I'm the one who gave love the permission to play with my mind.

The person I killed for committed suicide for the person that I killed.

That's life hey?

Life gave me lemons and instead of me making lemonade I ate the lemons as they are and look where I am today? In jail because I failed to take that love I have for Spider to use it to love myself instead.

I'm 25 years old and I have nothing under my name, not even a child.

There is nothing to remind the people that I was here, there was actually someone called Pamela Mtukela on Earth.

I'm laying on my bunker bed facing up. I am deep in my thoughts. I will never see the sun rise again.

I just have to wait for my dying day then.

I close my eyes and say a silent prayer thanking God for keeping me alive and also asking for forgiveness. I just hope my prayers reach his ears and he forgives me.

I will also write a letter to Mathapelo and Menziwa apologizing for killing their baby.

Another one to Bakkie for killing his cousin. Even if they don't forgive me then it's fine but I would have apologized. That's all that matters.

Not that I expect them to forgive cause I for one know that I would never forgive someone who takes away something valuable to me. I would make sure they go down so I understand. I won't hold anything against them. It's your choice whether to forgive someone or not. You're not forced to do it.

Ayi guys this is where my story ends. Even though I wasn't an important character but argh you get to read my point of view anyways so I guess I'm important in some way.

The story ends with Makhosazane being the only family that I have...and me being the only family that she has. Well we are all that we have after all. We have no choice. We are here for the same crimes so why not? When we will get out of the same time. Nah I'm just kidding we are never getting out of here.

I'm saying these vows to these jail bars looking at me...

"FOR BETTER OR FOR WORSE. BLESSING OR CURSE. TILL DEATH DO US APART"

Dankoe...

MATHAPELO (PELO)

It's like my head isn't functioning.

It's like I'm a mad woman. It's like I'm not living on my own body. My soul is roaming around alone and the body is still in shock of what just happened.

My left arm isn't working. It's like I've got stroke.

The news that I received today left my whole body in shock and in disbelief.

NOBODY! I repeat nobody deserves the pain that I'm going through.

I'm not making it I won't lie. Everything is falling apart.

I'm in this dark place that I don't think I'll ever resurface from ever in my life.

I'm sinking into depression. I get anxiety attacks literally every hour.

My heart is not beating in the normal rate. It's like my heart is beating in my ears. Everything seems to be happening in slow motion.

Everyone's voices seem to be fading away and everything appearing as blurry.

My future husband left me. He left me. I laugh in disbelief. He promised not to leave me but he did anyway. He left me before taking me into his loving arms to tell me it's not my fault...telling me that everything is going to be okay... that we will find our kids and go home and continue building a legacy for our kids but where is he now? He's gone!

It's like a part of me has died with him. A part of me is gone and gone forever.

When he left me my left arm died with him because that's where he left his ring. My arm cannot function. Stroke hit it...but not as bad as how life had hit me. Stroke is nothing compared to how I'm feeling right now. It's only a quarter of things that I'm going thru.

Police came to where we are and told me that my fiance died in a car accident on his way to me.

If I didn't call him he would still be alive. If MaShezi didn't steal my kids then this would not have happened. If I took my kids with me my family would have been alive and with me today. How I wish I could turn back the hands of time.

Police were also called so that they could open a case.

It's useless though... MaShezi made it clear that nobody will find her. Even police so it's no use.

The world is spinning. It's like every problem each person has on this world is mine. I have a really pounding headache.

I don't think I'll ever recover from this.

Someone disappeared with my kids then my fiance died and left me. The pain would have been better if he was here

because he would have told me that I'm not alone... We will go thru this life thing together..

Who am I supposed to turn to now? Life is no fair...

Luncumolwamoluhle.. mommy is nothing without you my babies. A part of me left with you. Mommy will miss you everyday of her life and I won't rest until I find you and hold you safe in my arms.... You will forever be engraved in my heart and soul. Me and Mcebisi will certainly miss you.

Ngiyanithanda zithandwa zikamama (I love you guys... mommy's loves)

Sthandwa sami, myeni wami (My love, my husband).... I will forever love you. I don't think I'll love again if love is still going to leave me all alone. Thank you for the love and security you gave me. You were one in a million. The only true person to rule my heart as a whole. Uyakuthanda uMaMokoena... Phumula ngokuthula Mangethe...

Phumula Sthandwa Sami...

(MaMokoena loves you...

Rest in peace Mangethe...

Rest in peace my love...)

I look at the drip hanging above me.

I have been hospitalized because I suffered from trauma.

Life will never be the same again. I'm guessing life has its favorites because I don't deserve this a bit... Nobody does.

What is left is me having to make peace with everything that has happened to me...

I don't have a choice...

For now...

Goodnight my love... I'll see you very soon...

I love you....

MENZIWA ZULU

My whole house is a crime scene.

Cops are busy running up and down.

According to them this is going to be their top case, they are making it their priority to find them.

I would really appreciate God if he would keep them safe for me until I find them.

Life is going to be really hard for me since I don't know where they are.

I've already given them my statement...telling them everything that I know. Giving them pictures of Luncumolwamoluhle and Zandile.

I'm even ashamed to call her my wife. What she did is evil and heartless. I will never look at woman the same way ever again in my life.

Some woman are just disgrace to women kind. Makhosazane is nothing compared to Zandile.

Ayy shame she deserves her award of being the devil on Earth. I'm still in shock because of what she did. She's a hypocrite! She has a nerve for days.. argh maan that woman! What is she hoping to gain vele?

I so hate her right now! If I could see her right now I would strangle her to death. That's how much I despise her! She has no shame!!

How Mathapelo was when the ambulance took her really shock me.

She has been diagnosed with stroke and she suffered from shock.

This whole thing is weighing heavy on her and I feel for her big time.



If she hates me after this then it doesn't matter because I know I'm the cause of it.

Everything that happened to our babies I blame myself because if I didn't have stupid feelings for Mathapelo then my wife would have still remained good hearted. If also I listened to Mathapelo when she said she doesn't trust Zandile then none of this could have happened.

If there is a person to blame for that it could be me.

I also didn't trust her but I left my kids anyway. That is called being reckless.

Some people don't have hearts you know. The kids are innocent if there's one person that needed to be punished for my sins is me.

I fear for Mathapelo since she also lost Bakkie. I can't really imagine what she is going thru. To make matters worse is the fact that she's pregnant.

To show that indeed Zandile is heartless she left our kids then took mine... I mean who does that?

She wasn't lying when she said she is a psycho.

She is what I call "sweet but a psycho"

My mother is angry at me. She locked herself up in her room and doesn't want to talk. I guess she's praying in there.

I understand her frustrations... I'm also angry at myself.

I've never been heart broken like this before...

To even think I will never see my kids again sends shivers to my spine.

My kids: Daddy loves you and misses you very much. I'm sorry for giving you in a silver platter to your worst enemy. Uyaxolisa ubaba...

Now I'm just left all alone to deal with the mess that Zandile made. Life is a game that you need to be smart about..

I've already sent people to look for my kids. One thing for sure is that I won't rest until I find them..

Even if it's the last thing that I ever got to do...

All stories end with happy endings but I have a feeling my story is just getting started so I won't bother with goodbyes all I've got to say now is....

STAY TUNED....

Dark or blue this story must have a happy ending...

To be continued.....

## EPILOGUE

A DAY LATER...

APHELELE ZULU

Yesterday I went home since Michael called me...

To my surprise he has bought us a new house. It's something that blew me away even more. One thing for sure it's that I have found my soulmate... Someone I don't wanna imagine my life without. Someone who knows me like the back of his hand. Someone who is proud to call me his fiance. Someone I'm proud to call me mine. Someone I know that he will be with me through thick and thick... Well yes till death do us apart...

I'm happy I found him before anyone else... It sounds wrong saying that... I'm happy he found me.

You know when girls define a man like "every woman's dream" well right there is Nozibusiso's father.

My daughter is lucky to have him as a parent and he is so wonderful with her.

One thing I love about my babe is that he's transparent with me. I really appreciate that a lot. We don't have any secrets that we have, we trust each other like that.

Before anything else everyone should be best friends with their partners and I guarantee that you will have less fights and learn to live with each other more.

Yesterday we just took a tour around our new house then blessed it (winks). Nozibusiso is with her grandma so we didn't have her disturb us.

I also found out that MaShezi stole the kids... Such a disgrace! She shouldn't call herself a woman to be honest!!

Today I'll be headed home to see how everyone is holding up. I'm sure wherever Mathapelo is she's really hurting. I can't imagine the pain I would go through if someone told me that Nozibusiso is gone... I'll die literally...

I'm sitting on the bed with the cover covering my naked body. Michael is still sleeping...

I'm writing a letter. I wanna go thru with life and not leave any unfinished story...

It goes like this:

"Dear: Mama...

I finally did it. I found the person who makes me happy more than anyone...

I think it's only fair you know what's happening in my life...

I have a fiance and I am a mother. I named her Nozibusiso Makhosazane Zulu...but once me and her father are married we'll both change our surnames. I gave her your name because I felt like it's the right thing to do. I felt like I would learn to love you thru her. I hope it will help me in my journey towards healing.

I finally went back to school and finished my qualification. I'm just waiting to find a job but my fiance is taking care of me so I don't think I'll be working anytime soon.

I'm also getting married in a month. I'm happy to tell you that it's a guy I'm getting married to. I know I'm surprised myself but I just fell in love.

I want to say I forgive you. For everything that happened. I want us to start afresh with everything. I'm just hoping it's not too late.

I want you to meet your granddaughter. I want you to meet your family. I just want us to start over..

Let me stop here. I'll come visit you tomorrow...

I love you MaFuze.

Your daughter

Aphelele Zulu..."

I stop writing and look outside. My room has a balcony which makes it easier to see the sun rising. Indicating that it's a new day. A chance to fix mistakes from yesterday. To do everything right. A chance to start over in a new day. As long as we live there's still a chance to start over. Yes I'm doing it. I'm finally forgiving my mother...

I feel huge arms hugging me. My home...

Me: "Baby"

Michael: "Love"

Me: "How are you?"

Michael: "I'm great and how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine just overwhelmed"

Michael: "I'm proud of you baby"

Me: "Thank you baby"

Michael: "That's my girl"

Me: "I want to say thank you for everything Mi Amor... I know it's not going to be easy but with you by my side I know I will conquer everything that comes my way. Thank you better half

Advertisement

I appreciate you my love. Ngiyakuthanda Mpumulo Peterson".

Michael: "Just save that for our wedding day"

We both laugh.

Michael: "And thank you for being my woman I really appreciate you as well".

He kisses my bare shoulder.

Every story deserves a happy ending. This is my happy ending.

I have everything that I'll ever need in life and more...

I've been through a lot and still going to go thru a lot but I know I'll make it.

The Lord has my back, and that I'm sure of.

I'm the main character of my own story.

Life always serves a beautiful lesson at the end I learnt mine so I guess you have learnt from my mistakes.

It turns out I wasn't a man. I've always been a lady. Not being homophobic or something but we all decide how we live our lives.

We are free to do that right? I also decided to go back to what I was born into. It's my choice right?

I have respect for the LGBTQ community...you guys go through a lot but I know you'll make it cause I didn't. I decided to fall in love.

I can finally say THE MAN IN ME is dead.

Love killed it. I'm no longer a man and I'm proud of that.

I'm not ashamed of my past... And I will never be. It's a part of me.

Just like being who you are is a part of you...

My name is Aphelele Thembeka Zulu (soon to be Peterson) and this is my sto.... Wait hold on my phone is ringing...

I answer.

Me: "Hello"

Voice: "Hello. May I speak to Miss Aphelele Zulu?"

Me: "You're speaking to her"

Voice: "You are speaking to Ms Stellenbosch. I'm calling from the jail. Is Mrs Makhosazane Zulu your mother?"

My heart starts beating fast.

Me: "Yes she is"

Voice: "I'd like to inform you that your mother is no more due to fighting that happened here with the other inmates. She was stabbed really badly and she didn't make it... We would like you guys to....."

I don't hear what the lady says next.



I drop the phone on the floor.

Out of shock Michal takes the phone and continue speaking.

After a while he hangs up then comes and kneels infront of me.

I can feel myself losing my mind.

I feel like I'm losing my sanity. Something that makes me human.

Michael: "I'm sorry Sthandwa Sami"

Me: "It's okay"

My throat dries up.

I look at the letter on top of my diary. A letter I wrote just a few minutes ago. A letter to my mother. A letter that was going to tell her that I forgive her and want us to start over...

How am I going to tell her now? She's gone and never coming back.

She left without saying goodbye. She left without seeing me.

I know she died with a broken heart. A broken heart that is now left with me because she left without fixing things with me. I'm now left with nothing but regrets and a broken heart.

Life is unfair especially to me.

I have my forehead against Michael's.

Tears stream down... My whole body is paralyzed from the news I just heard.

It's like I've developed a new wound in my heart that will take forever to heal...

Mawami kodwa...

Rest in eternal peace Mafuz'afulele njengefu lemvula...

You definitely took my heart with you...

ZANDILE ZULU (MASHEZI)

Everything is set now all that we have to do is kill the kids and make the sacrifice.

I'm just hoping this thing happens really fast before someone actually finds us when we haven't escaped the country.

That will mean our plan that took a whole month would have been for nothing.

I've come too far to give up now and if I do give up I can't turn around now. Too much damage is already done. Damage that is unforgivable.

Menziwa put me through hell so it's time for revenge. They do say revenge is the best dish served cold.

I was never a mean or a vile person but the things Menziwa put me through made me to be the kind of person that I am today .

I know all of you are judge Judie right now but guess what? I don't care. I'm a psychopath I know that.

Mathapelo thought that she was all that when my husband fell head over the hills for her but now look who's laughing.

I'm sure everyone is losing their minds right now and boy I'm glad they are.

I was also losing mine seeing my husband love a woman that he promised me to never look at that way ever again.

Some time last year I met KaMangethe and she convinced me that she will help me bring Menziwa down to his knees.

It took a lot of convincing and I finally gave in.

I didn't think the plan would work but here we are.

We are at KaMangethe's house cause it's the last place people would think I went to.

I know they are looking for me in airports, trains and stuff but I'm glad to say they won't find me.

Since I have got my revenge I have decided to make myself rich.

I'm sacrificing all these kids for my wealth since I know I can't use them.

The thing is my marriage with Menziwa was forced. I didn't love him and he didn't love me either.

When we finally fell in love this happens?

Nah it doesn't work like that... It just won't work! Someone must go!

When I finally find happiness in my marriage someone comes and ruins that? Nah baby I have to ruin you as well.

I left my kids because they are Menziwa's kids... Yes there are mine as well but argh I'm giving them to him. They are his since I have his as well.

Maybe they will get a chance to experience their father's love since he was ignoring them because of these little demons.

They're old now. They won't be needing me anymore. I know wherever they are right now they hate me but argh who cares?

Menziwa was the only family I had because my mother told me that I must not come back because I'll be poor for the rest of my life.

I have tasted the nice life and now I don't want to let it go. Even if it means sacrificing human beings then so be it.

They are tied and gagged. We are in the rondavel and we have started with everything.

We couldn't start yesterday because the kids were troublesome so we had to get them to be settled first.

I have threatened them don't worry.

We could have made them fall asleep but this needs them to be alive since we will be taking their body parts while they are watching so that wasn't an option.

KaMangethe: "Let's start"

Me: "It's about time! It's been long you know!"

KaMangethe: "Patience child. You will receive a great prize for your patience"

Me: "Yeah yeah I know let's get to it then"

She kneels down on the straw mat.

She starts clapping her hands...

Suddenly I hear sirens... Oh no!

This can't be happening now!

I can't go to jail!...

I have come too far to be caught now!

This is certainly not good and unacceptable...

Oh no!

.....**THE END**.....